



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

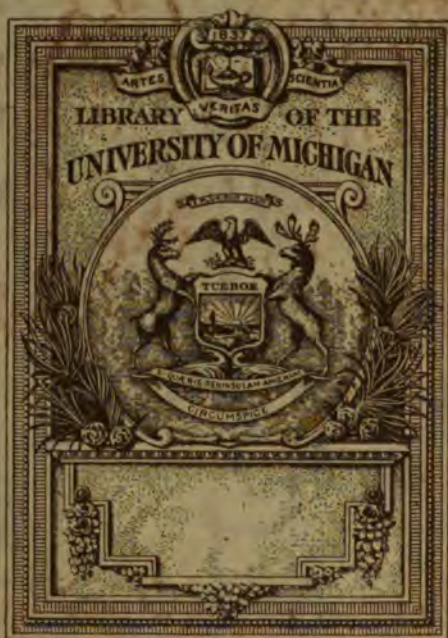
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



A SELECT COLLECTION
OF
OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

ORIGINALLY PUBLISHED BY ROBERT DODSLEY
IN THE YEAR 1744.



FOURTH EDITION,

NOW FIRST CHRONOLOGICALLY ARRANGED, REVISED AND ENLARGED
WITH THE NOTES OF ALL THE COMMENTATORS
AND NEW NOTES

BY

W. CAREW HAZLITT.

VOLUME THE SIXTH.

LONDON:
REEVES AND TURNER, 196 STRAND
AND 185 FLEET STREET.
1874.

Grad R. R. 2

PR
1261
.D65
1874

OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

VOL. VI.

THE CONFLICT OF CONSCIENCE.

RARE TRIUMPHS OF LOVE AND FORTUNE.

THE THREE LADIES OF LONDON.

THREE LORDS AND THREE LADIES OF LONDON

A KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE.

A SELECT COLLECTION
OF
OLD ENGLISH PLAYS.

ORIGINALLY PUBLISHED BY ROBERT DODSLEY
IN THE YEAR 1744.



FOURTH EDITION,

NOW FIRST CHRONOLOGICALLY ARRANGED, REVISED AND ENLARGED
WITH THE NOTES OF ALL THE COMMENTATORS
AND NEW NOTES

BY

W. CAREW HAZLITT.

VOLUME THE SIXTH.

LONDON:
REEVES AND TURNER, 196 STRAND
AND 185 FLEET STREET.
1874.



FIVE PLAYS.

VOL. VI.

A

389200

[These five dramas were originally edited for the Roxburghe Club in 1851 by Mr J. Payne Collier, and are now incorporated with the present Collection precisely as they stand in the Roxburghe Club volume, with Mr Collier's kind permission, his general introduction included. The only difference is that the notes, instead of occurring at the end of each Play, are placed at the foot of the page.]

[MR COLLIER'S GENERAL INTRODUCTION.]

FOUR of the five ensuing Plays belong to a peculiar class of our early dramatic performances never yet especially noticed, nor sufficiently illustrated.

Many specimens have of late years been printed, and reprinted, of Miracle-plays, of Moral-plays, and of productions written in the most matured period of our dramatic literature ; but little or nothing has been done to afford information respecting a species of stage-representation which constitutes a link between Moral-plays on the one hand, and Tragedy and Comedy on the other, as Tragedy and Comedy existed at the period when Shakespeare and his contemporaries were writers for various theatres in the metropolis. This deficiency it has been our main object to supply.

The four pieces to which we refer are neither plays which enforce a moral lesson by means of abstract impersonations only, nor are they dramas which profess to consist merely of scenes drawn from life, represented by real characters : they may be said to form a class by themselves, where characters both abstract and individual are employed in the same performance. The most remarkable drama of this intermediate kind, and the

only one to which particular attention has been directed in modern times, is called "The Tragical Comedy of Appius and Virginia," which originally came out in 1575, and is reprinted in the [former and present] edition of "Dodsley's Old Plays" from the sole existing copy.¹ In it an important historical event is commemorated, and the hero, heroine, and some other principal agents are known characters ; but they are mixed up with allegorical abstractions, and the representatives of moral qualities, while the Vice of the older stage is introduced, for the sake of diversifying the representation, and amusing popular audiences. The plot of this production has no religious application, and it was not written with any avowed moral purpose. In this respect, as well as in some other peculiarities, it is unlike the drama which stands first in the following sheets. Still, the general character is the same in both: in both we have a mixture of fact and fable, of reality and allegory, of individuality and abstraction, with the addition, in the latter case, of the enforcement of a lesson, for the instruction of those to whom it was addressed.

"The Conflict of Conscience," by Nathaniel Woodes, "Minister in Norwich," was originally printed in 1581, 4to, and it is reprinted in our volume from a copy in

¹ It is one of the six additional dramas which the Editor of the present volume caused to be [first] inserted in the impression which came out between the years 1825 and 1827. It may be here stated that his duties, from various circumstances, were almost solely confined to these six dramas, four of them by Robert Greene, by George Peele, by Thomas Lodge, and by Thomas Nash, no specimens of whose works had been previously included: the two other plays, then new to the collection, were "The World and the Child," and "Appius and Virginia."

the possession of the Editor, which has the advantage of a Prologue. This introductory address is wanting in the exemplar in the British Museum; but it unquestionably belonged to the piece, because it also precedes a third copy, in the library of the Duke of Devonshire. We know not that this drama was ever republished, but the Registers of the Company of Stationers contain an entry by John Charlwood, dated 15th June 1587, of "a ballad of Mr Fraunces, an Italian, a doctor of law, who denied the Lord Jesus,"¹ which, as will be seen presently, probably refers to the same story, and, though called "a ballad," may possibly have been a reprint of "The Conflict of Conscience." The names borne by the different characters are all stated upon the title-page, with such a distribution of the parts as would enable six actors to represent the piece; and looking merely at this list, which we have exactly copied, it does not appear in what way the performance bears even a remote resemblance to tragedy or comedy. The names read like an enumeration of such personages as were ordinarily introduced into the Moral-plays of an earlier period—indeed, one of them seems to be derived from the still more ancient form of Miracle-plays, frequently represented with the assistance of the clergy. We allude to Satan, who opens the body of the drama by a long speech (so long that we can hardly understand how a popular audience endured it) but does not afterwards take part in the action, excepting through the agency of such characters as Hypocrisy, Tyranny, and Avarice, who may be supposed to be his instruments, and under his influence and direction.

¹ See "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company" (printed for the Shakespeare Society), vol. ii. p. 230.

6 MR COLLIER'S GENERAL INTRODUCTION.

Nevertheless, a real and, as he may be considered, an historical, personage is represented in various scenes of the play, and is, in truth, its hero, although the author, for reasons assigned in the Prologue, objected to the insertion of his name in the text. These reasons, however, did not apply to the title-page, where the apostacy of Francis Spira, or Spiera, is announced as the main subject, and of whom an account may be found in Sleidan's "*Vingt-neuf Livres d'Histoire*" (liv. xxi. edit. Geneva, 1563). Spiera was an Italian lawyer, who abandoned the Protestant for the Roman Catholic faith, and in remorse and despair committed suicide about thirty years anterior to the date when "*The Conflict of Conscience*" came from the press. How long this event had occurred before Nathaniel Woodes wrote his drama upon the story, we have no means of knowing; but the object of the author unquestionably was to forward and fix the Reformation, and we may conclude, perhaps, that an incident of the kind would not be brought upon the stage until some years after Elizabeth had been seated on the throne, and until what was called "the new faith" was firmly settled in the belief, and in the affections, of the great majority of the nation. We apprehend, therefore, that "*The Conflict of Conscience*" was not written until about 1570.

It is the introduction of this real person, under the covert name of Philologus, that constitutes the chief distinction between the drama we have reprinted and Moral-plays, which, though still sometimes exhibited, were falling into desuetude. As most persons are aware, they consisted, in their first and simplest form, entirely of allegorical or representative characters, although, as audiences became accustomed to such abstrac-

tions, attempts were from time to time made to give, even to such imaginary impersonations, individual peculiarities and interests. Besides the hero of "The Conflict of Conscience," his friends Eusebius and Theologus may also have been intended for real personages; and Gisbertus and Paphinitius were, possibly, the true names of the sons of Francis Spiera.

It will be seen that the drama is divided into six acts; but the last act consists of no more than a short speech by a Nuntius, who comes forward, as it should seem, to give a false representation of an historical fact—so early did a dramatist feel himself warranted in deviating from received statements, if it better answered his purpose not to adhere to them. In the instance before us, Nathaniel Woodes thought fit to alter the catastrophe, for the sake of the moral lesson he wished to enforce; and he, therefore, represented that Spiera had not committed suicide, and had, to the great joy of his friends, before death been re-converted to the religion he had so weakly abandoned. It will be observed, also, that the divisions of acts and scenes are very irregularly made towards the conclusion of the performance. From one passage we learn that no less than thirty weeks are supposed to elapse between the *exit* of Philologus, and his death as announced on the next page.

Nearly the whole of the piece is written in the ordinary seven-line stanza, with here and there the insertion of a couplet, more, no doubt, for convenience than for variety. The author seems to have very little consulted the wishes and tastes of a popular assembly; for, independently of the wearisome introduction, the interlocutions are sometimes carried to the extreme of tediousness, and the comic scenes are few, and failures.

Perhaps, if any exception can be made, it is in favour of the interview between Hypocrisy, Tyranny, and Avarice, where the first, in consistency with his character, succeeds somewhat humorously in imposing upon both his companions. The long address of Caconos and his subsequent dialogue with Hypocrisy, Tyranny, and Avarice, is recommended to notice as an ancient and accurate specimen of our northern dialect. The long passage, where Caconos describes his knowledge of his portas by its illuminations, has been imitated by other authors, and, very likely, was not new in this drama.

What we have to state regarding the text of this play applies strictly to all the others. We have given, as far as modern typography would allow, faithful representations of the original copies, with the close observation of spelling and other peculiarities. If, for the sake of mere intelligibility, we have rarely added a word or even a letter, we have always inserted it between brackets; and for the settlement of difficulties, and the illustration of obscure customs and allusions, we refer to the notes which succeed each play. We might have subjoined them at the foot of the page, but we thought they would be considered by many a needless interruption; while, if we had reserved the whole for the end of our volume, their bulk, and the numerous paginal references might have produced confusion and delay. We judged it best, therefore, to follow each separate production by the separate notes applicable to it; and the reader will thus have, as far as our knowledge extends, the ready means of required explanation, which we have endeavoured to compress into the smallest compass. We ought to add, that the only liberty we have taken is with the old and ill-regulated

punctuation,¹ which it was often necessary to alter, that the sense of the author might be understood and appreciated.

The production which stands second in this volume may also be looked upon, in another sense, as intermediate with reference to stage-performances. It has for title "The rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune," and was probably designed by its unknown author for a court-show. The earliest information we possess regarding it establishes that it was represented before Queen Elizabeth between Christmas 1581 and February 1582. The following is the entry regarding it in the Accounts of the office of the Revels of that date :—

"A Historie of Love and Fortune, shewed before her Majestie at Wyndesor, on the sondaie at night next before new yeares daie. Enacted by the Earle of Derbies servauntes. For which newe provision was made of one Citty and one Battlement of Canvas, iij Ells of sarcenet, a [bolt] of canvas, and viij paire of gloves, with sondrey other furniture in this office."²

There exists in the same records a memorandum respecting "The play of Fortune" ten years earlier,³ but the terms employed are so general, that we do not feel warranted in considering it "The rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune" which we have reprinted : the "History of Love and Fortune," mentioned in the preceding quotation from the Revels' Accounts, was no

¹ [The orthography has now been modernised in conformity with the principle adopted with regard to the rest of the collection.]

² "Extracts from the Accounts of the Revels at Court," by Peter Cunningham, Esq. (printed for the Shakespeare Society), p. 176.

³ Ibid. p. 86.

10 MR. COLLIER'S GENERAL INTRODUCTION.

doubt the drama under consideration ; and we see that, besides sarcenet and gloves, the new properties (as they were then, and still are, called) necessary for the performance were a city and a battlement to be composed of, or represented on, canvas. We may perhaps conclude that the piece was not written long before it was acted at Windsor ; but it did not come from the press until 1589, and the sole copy of it is preserved in the library of the Earl of Ellesmere, who, in his known spirit of liberal encouragement, long since permitted the Editor to make a transcript of it. We have met with no entry of its publication in the Registers of the Stationers' Company.

It will be observed that the foundation of the piece depends upon a contest for superiority between Venus and Fortune, and that the first act (for the drama is regularly divided into acts, though the scenes are not distinguished) is a species of induction to the rest. It is the more remarkable, because it contains some early specimens of dramatic blank-verse, although it may be questioned whether the piece was ever exhibited at a public theatre.

We discover no trace of it in "Henslowe's Diary,"¹ nor in any other authority, printed or manuscript, relating to plays exhibited before public audiences in the reign of Elizabeth ; but it is nevertheless clear that it was "played before the Queen's most excellent Majesty" (as the title-page states) by the retainers of the Earl of Derby, a company of actors at that date engaged in public performances ; and it was then, and afterwards, usual for the Master of the Revels to select

¹ Printed for the Shakespeare Society, in 1845, from the original most valuable MS. preserved in Dulwich College.

tragedies for performance at court, that were favourites with persons who were in the habit of frequenting the houses generally employed, or purposely erected, for dramatic representations. If "The rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune" were ever acted at a public theatre, the several shows in the first act, of Troilus and Cressida, of Alexander, of Dido, of Pompey and Caesar, and of Hero and Leander, would of course have been attractive.

It is not necessary to enter at all into the plot, which was composed to evince alternately the power of Venus and of Fortune in influencing the lives of a pair of faithful lovers: the man, with some singularity, being called Hermione, and the woman Fidelia. They are successively placed by the two goddesses in situations of distress and difficulty, from which they are ultimately released; and in the end Venus and Fortune are reconciled, and join in promoting the happiness of the couple they had exposed to such trials. The serious business is relieved by some attempts at comedy by a clownish servant, called Lentulo, and in the third act a song is introduced for greater variety, which, as was not unusual at a later period of our stage-history, seems to have been left to the choice of the performer. The prayer for the Queen, at the conclusion of the drama, put into the mouth of Fortune, was a relic of a more ancient practice, and perhaps affords further proof, if it were wanted, that it was represented before Elizabeth.¹ It appears not unlikely that, if "The rare Triumphs of

¹ [Hardly so, perhaps, as scarcely any drama of this date occurs without such a prayer. The earliest in which we have seen the prayer for Elizabeth is the interlude of "Nice Wanton," 1560.]

Love and Fortune" had been chosen by the Master of the Revels for representation at court on account of its popularity, the fact of its having been acted by a particular company at a known theatre would have been stated upon the title-page, as a testimony to its merits, and as an incentive to its purchasers.

We need not hesitate in stating that the third and fourth dramas in the present volume were "publicly played," and the title-page of one of them states the fact. Moreover, they were the authorship of a most distinguished individual, perhaps only second to Tarlton as an actor, and decidedly his superior as an author. Nothing that has come down to us leads us to suppose, that Tarlton had much beyond his lavish extemporal wit and broad drollery to recommend him; for although various productions were attributed to him, such as are extant do not warrant an opinion that, as a writer, he had much originality.¹ The reverse is the case with Robert Wilson, whose initials are on the title-pages of "The three Ladies of London," and of "The three Lords and three Ladies of London," and who, besides his well-attested talents as a public performer, was indisputably a dramatist of great ability. He, too, was famous for his extreme readiness of reply, when suddenly called upon; but we cannot help suspecting that some confusion has arisen between the Robert Wilson, the writer of the two dramas above-named (as well as of "The Cobbler's Prophecy," 1594, a production of a similar character), and the Robert Wilson who is men-

¹ It seems more than probable that "Tarlton's Jig of the Horse-load of Fools" (inserted in the introduction to the reprint of his "Jests" by the Shakespeare Society, from a MS. belonging to the Editor of this volume), was written for his humorous recitation by some popular author.

tioned in "Henslowe's Diary," and whom Meres, as late as 1598, calls "our worthy Wilson," adding that he was "for learning and extemporal wit, without compare or compeer."¹ The younger Robert Wilson was, perhaps, the son of the elder; but without here entering into the evidence on the point (with which we were not formerly so well-acquainted), we may state our persuasion generally, that the Robert Wilson who was appointed one of the leaders of one of Queen Elizabeth's two companies of players in 1583,² was not the same Robert Wilson who was a joint-author, with Munday, Drayton, and Hathway, in the drama on the story of Sir John Oldcastle, imputed to Shakespeare on the authority of some copies printed in 1600.

There are two old editions of "The three Ladies of London," one of them printed in 1584, the text of which we have followed, and the other in 1592, the various readings of which we have noted. Both of them have the initials R. W. on the title-page as those of the writer; but some doubt has been thrown upon the question of authorship, because, at the end of the piece, in both impressions, we read "Finis. Paul Bucke." The fact, however, no doubt is that Paul Bucke who, it has been recently ascertained, was an actor,³ subscribed the transcript, which about 1584 he had pro-

¹ "Palladis Tamia. Wits Treasury, &c., by Francis Meres, Maister of Artes of both Universities." 8vo. 1598, fol. 286.

² "Hist. of Engl. Dram. Poetry and the Stage," i. 255.

³ See "Memoirs of the Principal Actors in the Plays of Shakespeare" (printed for the Shakespeare Society), p. 131. If Bucke were a young actor in 1584, he had a natural son buried in 1599, but it is not stated how old that son then was.

cured for Roger Ward the printer, in order to authenticate it: hence the connection of his name with the production, in the performance of which he may also have had a share, and he may thus have had access to the prompter's book. The Paul Bucke, who in 1578 was the author of a "prayer for Sir Humphrey Gilbert," was in all probability the same individual.¹

The second edition of 1592 would seem, from the many variations, to have been printed from a different manuscript to that used for the edition of 1584, and in some respects it was an improvement. Still, as we have stated, the name of Paul Bucke is at the termination of both; and it is a somewhat remarkable indication of the care displayed in bringing out the second edition, that whereas in the first edition an event is spoken of as having occurred in the reign of Queen Mary, "not much more than twenty-six years" before, in the second edition printed seven or eight years afterwards, the figures 26 are altered to 33. Such proofs of attention to comparative trifles were unusual in the reprints of old plays; and it may be doubted whether in this instance it would have been afforded, had not "The three Ladies of London" continued such a favourite with the town as to occasion its frequent repetition at the public theatre. A piece of evidence to show the popularity of the drama long after its original publication is to be found in Edward Guilpin's "Skialetheia, or a Shadowe of Truth," 8vo, 1598, where it is thus distinctly alluded to—

¹ See the entry of it by Henry Kirkham in the "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company" (printed for the Shakespeare Society), vol. ii. p. 61.

"The world's so bad that vertue's over-awde,
 And forst, poore soule, to become vices bawde;
 Like the old morall of the comedie,
 Where Conscience favours Lucar's harlotry."

These lines are contained in the first satire of this very curious and interesting work, and the readers of the drama will at once be aware of their application.¹

"The three Ladies of London" recommended itself to our notice for the present volume, on account of the peculiarity of its construction: Guilpin, we see, speaks of it as "the old moral of the comedy," and this, in truth, is the exact description of it. It is neither entirely a "moral," nor entirely a "comedy," but a mixture of both, differing from the drama that stands first in our volume, because the real characters introduced are not known or historical personages. Most of the *dramatis personæ* are indisputably allegorical or representative, the embodiments of certain virtues and vices; but individuals are also employed, such as Gerontus a Jew, and Mercadore a merchant, besides a Judge who is called upon to determine a dispute between them. This portion of the piece may be said to belong to a more advanced period of our stage, and distinguishes it, as far as we are aware, from anything of the kind known anterior to the date when the production first came from the press. The name Gerontus can hardly fail to bring to mind that of the hero of the old

¹ We quote from Mr Utterson's, on all accounts, valuable reprint of Guilpin's collection of Epigrams and Satires, which was limited to sixteen copies. The same gentleman has conferred many other disinterested favours of the same kind on the lovers of our ancient literature.

ballad of "Gernutus, the Jew of Venice;"¹ but there is a remarkable difference between the two persons: in the play before us Gerontus is represented in a very favourable light, as an upright Jew, only anxious to obtain his own property by fair means, while his antagonist, a Christian merchant, endeavours to defeat the claim by fraud, perjury, and apostacy. So far the drama of "The three Ladies of London" contradicts the position, founded mainly upon Marlowe's Barabas² and Shakespeare's Shylock, that our early dramatists eagerly availed themselves of popular prejudices against the conscientious adherents to the old dispensation.

The construction of "The three Ladies of London" in other respects will speak for itself, but we may be allowed to give Wilson credit for the acuteness and political subtlety he evinces in several of his scenes; for the severity of many of his touches of satire; for his amusing illustrations of manners; for his exposure of the tricks of foreign merchants, and for the humour and drollery which he has thrown into his principal comic personage. The name of this character is Simplicity, who is the fool or clown of the performance, and who, in conformity with the practice, not only of our earlier but sometimes of our later stage, makes several amusing appeals to the audience. We may pretty safely conclude, although we are without any hint of the kind, that this arduous part was sustained by the author himself.

¹ Percy's Reliques, i. 226, edit. 1812. There are copies in the Roxburghe, Pepys, and Ashmole collections.

² In his "Jew of Malta" reprinted in the Rev. A. Dyce's edit. of "The Works of Christopher Marlowe," i. 227.

The original copy of this production, to which we have resorted, is among the Garrick Plays : we recollect to have met with no other copy of the edition of the year 1584 ; but at least three of the later impression have come under our notice : one is in the library of the Duke of Devonshire, another in that of the Earl of Ellesmere, and a third at Oxford. Of all these we have more or less availed ourselves in our reprint.

The fourth play in the ensuing pages, "The three Lords and three Ladies of London," is connected in subject with the third, and, as stated already, is by the same author, who placed his initials, R. W., upon the title-page. The reprint is made from a copy in the possession of the Editor, compared with two others of the same date which in no respect vary : it may be right to mention this fact, because, as all who have been in the habit of examining the productions of our early stage are aware, important alterations and corrections were sometimes introduced while the sheets were going through the press. Our title-page, including the wood-cut, may be considered a fac-simile. It will be seen that it was printed in 1590, and it was probably written by Robert Wilson about two years before, as a sort of second part to his "Three Ladies of London," which had met with such decided success. That success was perhaps in some degree revived by the frequent performance of "The three Lords and three Ladies of London," and the consequence seems to have been the publication of the new edition of the former in 1592.

The author called his new effort "The pleasant and stately Moral of the three Lords and three Ladies of London," and it bears, in all its essential features, a strong resemblance to the species of drama known as a Moral or Moral-play. This resemblance is even more

close and striking than that of "The three Ladies of London;" for such important characters as Gerontus and Mercadore are wanting, and as far as the *dramatis personæ* are concerned, there is little to take it out of the class of earlier dramatic representations, but the characters of Nemo and the Constable, the latter being so unimportant that Wilson did not include him in the list of "the Actor's names" which immediately follows the title. Had the piece, however, made a still more remote approach to comedy, and had it possessed fewer of the mixed features belonging to its predecessor, we should unhesitatingly have reprinted it as a necessary sequel.

Towards the conclusion of the drama, as well indeed as in the introductory stanzas, the allusions to the Armada and to the empty vaunts of the Spaniards are so distinct and obvious, that we cannot place the composition of it earlier than 1588; but it must have remained in manuscript for about two years, since it was not published until after July 1590, the following entry in the Stationers' Registers bearing date the 31st of that month:—

"Richard Jones. Entered for his copie, under thandes of doctor Wood and the wardens, a comedie of the plesant and statelie morrall of the Three lordes of London."¹

Richard Jones, as will be seen from the imprint, was the publisher of the work; but the clerk who made the memorandum in the books blundered respecting

¹ This quotation will appear in the next, the third, volume of "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," which is now in the press of the Shakespeare Society. [This third volume never appeared.]

the name, and, besides terming it "a comedy" as well as "a pleasant and stately moral," he omitted that portion of the title which immediately connects it with "The three Ladies of London." That connection is avowed in the Prologue (usually called a "Preface") which was spoken by "a Lady, very richly attired, representing London;" and it is evident that the author had every reason for making the fact prominent, inasmuch as it was his interest to prove the relationship between his new offspring and a drama that had for some years been established in public approbation. London, speaking in the poet's name, therefore, says—

"My former fruits were lovely Ladies three ;
Now of three Lords to talk is London's glee :
Whose deeds I wish may to your liking frame,
For London bids you welcome to the same."

Although, in its plot and general character, "The three Lords and three Ladies of London" is not so far advanced towards genuine comedy, the representation of life and manners, as its first part, "The three Ladies of London," in style and composition it makes a much nearer approach to what soon afterwards became the language of the stage, such as we find it in the works of Shakespeare, and of some of his most gifted contemporaries. Wilson, doubtless, saw the necessity, in 1588, of adopting some of those improvements of versification in which Marlowe had led the way; he therefore laid aside (excepting in a few comic scenes) his heavy, lumbering, and monotonous fourteen-syllable lines (sometimes carried to a greater length for the sake of variety) and not only usually employed ten-syllable lines, but introduced speeches of blank verse. His drama opens with this then uncommon form, and he avails himself of it afterwards, interspersing also prose in such situa-

tions as did not seem to require measured speech. This of itself was at that time a bold undertaking; for Marlowe had only just before 1588, when "The three Lords and three Ladies of London" must have been written, commenced weaning audiences at our public theatres from what, in the Prologue to his "Tamburlaine the Great," he ridicules as the "jigging veins of rhiming motherwits."¹ Robert Wilson is, on this account, to be regarded with singular respect, and his works to be read with peculiar interest. It is not easy to settle the question of precedency, but, as far as our knowledge at present extends, he seems entitled to be considered the second writer of blank verse for dramas intended for popular audiences. This is a point of view in which his productions have never yet been contemplated, and it renders the play we have reprinted, illustrating as it does so important and striking a change, especially worthy of notice and republication.

Something has been already said respecting the characters who figure in this representation, and we may add that although Simplicity, who here performs even a more prominent and important part than in "The three Ladies of London," must be reckoned the impersonation of a quality, and the representative of a class, so much individuality is given to him, particularly in his capacity of a ballad-singer, that it is impossible not to take a strong interest in all that he says, and in the incidents in which he is engaged. Richard Tarlton,

¹ The question when blank verse was first employed in our public theatres is considered and discussed in the "History of English Dramatic Poetry and the Stage," iii. 107, and the whole of Marlowe's Prologue, in which he may be said to claim the credit of its introduction, is quoted on p. 116.

the famous comedian, died on 3d Sept. 1588, rather more than a month after the entry of "The three Lords and three Ladies of London" at Stationers' Hall; and in this play it will be seen that Simplicity produces his "picture" before the audience, and gives a minute account of his habits, appearance, and employments. It is clear, therefore, as Tarlton is spoken of as dead, that this part of the drama must have been written, and introduced, subsequent to the memorandum in the Stationers' Registers. This of itself is a curious circumstance, and it serves to show with what promptitude our old dramatists availed themselves of any temporary matter that could give attraction and popularity to their plays.

As we have supposed Wilson himself to have acted Simplicity in "The three Ladies of London," we may perhaps conclude that he sustained the same character in "The three Lords and three Ladies of London." The part was an excellent one for the display of comic humour and clownish drollery, and the enumeration of the old ballads he sings and sells needs no illustration here, where, in fact, it would be out of place. The familiar manner in which Simplicity at times addresses the audience, for the sake of raising a laugh, is even more unlicensed in this play than in its predecessor, and we never before saw the words "To the audience" introduced, by way of stage-direction to the performer, that he might appeal to the spectators.¹

The copy of this play most employed in the ensuing

¹ This practice of addressing the audience was continued to a comparatively late date, and Thomas Heywood's Plays, as reprinted by the Shakespeare Society, afford various instances of it.

pages is the property of the Editor, but he has had an opportunity of comparing it with another in the library of the Duke of Devonshire.

The connection between the productions of our ancient and more modern stage, such as it existed at the close of the reign of Elizabeth, is even more slightly evidenced by the drama which comes last in our volume, the main features of which bear only a distant resemblance to our drama, while it was still under the trammels of allegorical impersonation. Nevertheless, the likeness is to be traced without difficulty; and when we find such a character as Honesty most prominently engaged from the beginning to the end of the performance (to say nothing of the introduction of the representative of the principle of evil in two passages), the mind is carried back to a period of our theatrical history when such characters were alone employed on our stage. Honesty has no necessary connection with the plot, nor with its development, beyond the exposure by his means of fraud, flattery, and hypocrisy: he bears no relation, however distant, to any of the parties engaged in the performance, and seems to have been designed by the unknown author as a sort of running commentator and bitter satirist upon the vices and follies of mankind. On the other hand, the chief characters among the *dramatis personæ* are real and historical, and King Edgar and Bishop Dunstan, with Ethenwald and Alfrida, may be said to figure prominently throughout. The Knight, the Squire, and the Farmer, who make their appearance further on, are clearly embodiments of the several classes of society to which they appertain. Thus, although the "Knack to know a Knave" makes a nearer approach to comedy than any of the four dramas which precede it, it still by

no means entirely discards the use of personages of a description which, many years earlier, engrossed our stage. Characters and scenes of life and manners are blended with others supported only by conventional impersonations, in which the dialogue is not intended to advance the plot, but merely to enforce a lesson of morality, probity, or discretion.

It is not always easy to guess at the full meaning of the author in various scenes he introduces, but some of them were obviously inserted for the purpose of exciting the laughter of the audience, and of giving an opportunity of display to a favourite low comedian. One of the actors is expressly mentioned on the title-page, where "Kemp's applauded merriments of the men of Gotham, in receiving the King into Gotham" are made prominent; but unless much were left to the extemporaneous invention of the performer, or unless much has been omitted in the printed copy, which was inserted by the author in his manuscript, it is difficult at this time of day to discover in what the wit, if not the drollery, consisted. As this portion of the play has come down to us, it seems to be composed of mere ignorant and blundering buffoonery, unworthy of a comedian, who undoubtedly afterwards sustained important humorous characters in the plays of Shakespeare. Who was the Bailiff of Hexham, and why he was brought forward on his deathbed near the opening of the drama, we are unable to explain, unless the author's object were that the spectators, when the Bailiff was ultimately carried away by the devil, should have ocular proof of the condign punishment which followed his principles as explained to his sons, and his practices as avowed by himself.

We can establish, almost to a day, when the "Knack

24 MR COLLIER'S GENERAL INTRODUCTION.

to know a Knave" was first represented, for we find it thus entered in "Henslowe's Diary:" it is in an account relating to the performances of the company acting under the name of Lord Strange, at the Rose Theatre, from 19th Feb. 1591-2 to the 22d June 1592—

R[ecieve]d at Jeronimo, the 9 of June 1592 xxvii^j.

Rd at a Knack to know a Knave, 1592, 1 day iiij^j. xij^j.

Rd at Harry the VI, the 12 June 1592 xxxiii^j.

Here, therefore, we find (reforming the uncouth spelling of the old manager) that the play under consideration was acted, for the first day,¹ between the 9th and 12th June 1592, and that Henslowe's share of the receipts amounted to £3, 12s. 0d. It was acted again on 15th and 22d June, when the account ends. William Kemp was at this time a member of the company in the prosperity of which Henslowe was interested, and had not yet joined the association acting under the sanction of the Lord Chamberlain, to which, in 1592, Shakespeare had for some years belonged. "Ed. Allen and his Company," spoken of on the title-page to the printed copy of "A Knack to know a Knave" as those by whom it had been "played," were the actors of Lord Strange.²

With regard to the date when the "Knack to know a Knave" was printed, we are in possession of pretty distinct evidence that it came out in the early part of

¹ Besides "1 day," in the body of the entry ("Henslowe's Diary," p. 28), the letters *we* are inserted in the margin, by which also the manager indicated that the piece performed was a *new* play. Both these circumstances were unnoticed by, because unknown to, Malone when he had the original MS. from Dulwich College for some years in his hands.

² See "Memoirs of Edward Alleyn," founder of Dulwich College (printed for the Shakespeare Society), p. 29, &c.

1594, the year stated on the title-page. The imprint also informs us that Richard Jones, then carrying on business at the Rose and Crown near Holborn Bridge, was the typographer; and we meet with the following entry at Stationers' Hall, preparatory to the publication, with his name prefixed to it.

"vij^e Januarij [1593-4]

"Rich. Jones. Entred for his Copie &c. A comedie entitled a Knack to knowe a Knaue, newlye sett fourth, as it hath sundrye tymes ben plaid by Ned Allen and his Companie, with Kemps applauded Merymentes of the men of Goteham."¹

The sum paid to the clerk who kept the register was, as usual, sixpence; and from the terms above employed, which nearly follow those of the title-page, we may feel pretty sure that the copy taken to Stationers' Hall was a printed one, and not, as seems to have been generally the case, a manuscript.

There is no doubt that the drama was extremely popular both on and off the stage; and although it is now one of the scarcest of our old plays, it must have been a profitable speculation to the publisher. In order that the various parties interested might more effectually avail themselves of the favour with which it had been received, a sort of counterpart was written to it, and acted for the first time on 22d October 1594, by the players of the Queen and of the Earl of Sussex (then

¹ This memorandum, securing the right of publication to Richard Jones, is also contained in the forthcoming volume of "Extracts from the Registers of the Stationers' Company," to be issued by the Shakespeare Society.

performing together), under the title of "A Knack to know an Honest Man." This drama, though inferior in every respect, appears by "Henslowe's Diary" (for he was also interested in the receipts of these united associations) to have had a long and advantageous run.¹ It was not published until 1596, and it was previously entered on the Stationers' books by Cuthbert Burby. In the same year was printed by Valentine Simmes a work, the title of which was evidently borrowed from the proverbial expression "a knack to knowe a knave," which possibly had its origin in the great popularity of the drama we have reprinted. This work was by M. B., and was called "The Triall of true Friendship; or a perfect mirror to discerne a trustie friend from a flattering Parasite—Otherwise a *Knack to know a Knave* from an honest man." One principal purpose of the play under consideration was to expose the flattery of the parasite Perin, who endeavoured to impose upon King Edgar, but was detected by Honesty. It seems not unlikely that Honesty was the character sustained by Edward Alleyn, but we have no knowledge of the distribution of any of the parts, beyond the fact that Kemp played a chief blunderer in the comic scene; whether that was the Miller, the Cobbler, or the Smith may, perhaps, admit of dispute.

The story of the serious portion of the play was doubtless derived from an old ballad, inserted by Thomas Deloney in his "Garland of Good Will" (probably written by him), where it is entitled "A Song of King Edgar, showing how he was deceived of his Love." As it is reprinted in all the editions of "Evans's Old Ballads," and has been the subject of two

¹ See his "Diary," pp. 43-48, 50, 51, 54, 55, 57, 62, and 82.

plays in comparatively modern times,¹ it is not necessary here to give any detail of the plot, which also, in several incidents, strongly resembles parts of Robert Greene's "Friar Bacon and Friar Bongay," which, like the "Knack to know a Knave," was printed in 1594.²

The Editor was, some years ago, permitted to make a transcript of this rare play from a copy in the library of his Grace the Duke of Devonshire, that in the British Museum being very defective in several places, and the missing pages having been supplied by very delusive manuscript. The Rev. Alexander Dyce also possesses a perfect exemplar, which was extremely useful for the purpose of collation.

¹ "Elfrid," afterwards remodelled under the title of "Athelwold," by Aaron Hill; and "Elfrida," by William Mason. At an earlier date the story, more or less altered, furnished a subject to Rymer and Ravenscroft.

² See vol. viii. of the former edition of Dodsley's "Old Plays," p. 165; and Rev. A. Dyce's edition of Robert Greene's Works, i. 141.

THE CONFLICT OF CONSCIENCE.

EDITION.

An excellent new Commedie, Intituled: The Conflict of Conscience. Contayninge, A most lamentable example of the dolefull desperation of a miserable world-linge termed by the name of Philologus, *who* forsooke the trueth of Gods Gospel, for feare of the losse of lyfe & worldly goods. Compiled, by Nathaniell Woodes, Minister, in Norwich.

¶ The Actors names, deuided into six partes, most conuenient for such as be disposed, either to shew this Comedie in priuate houses, or otherwise.

PROLOGUE,	}	<i>For one.</i>	AVARICE,	}	<i>For one.</i>
MATHEW,			SUGGESTION,		
CONSCIENCE,			GIBBERTUS,		
PAPHINITIUS,			NUNTIUS,		
SATAN,	}	<i>For one.</i>	HYPOCRISY,	}	<i>For one.</i>
TYRANNY,			THEOLOGUS,		
SPIRIT,			CARDINAL,	}	<i>For one.</i>
HORROR,			CAOON,		
EUSEBIUS,			PHILOLOGUS,		<i>For one.</i>

At London Printed by Richarde Bradocke dwellinge in Aldermanburie, a little aboue the Conduict. Anno. 1581.
4°. Black-letter.

THE PROLOGUE.

WHEN whirling winds which blow with blust'ring
blast,
Shall cease their course, and not the air move,
But still unstirred it doth stand, it chanceth at the
last
To be infect, the truth hereof even day by day we
prove ;
For deep within the caves of earth of force it doth
behave,
Sith that no winds do come thereto, the air out to
beat,
By standing still the closed air doth breed infec-
tions great.

¶ The stream or flood, which runneth up and down,
Is far more sweet than is the standing brook :
If long unworn you leave a cloak or gown,
Moths will it mar, unless you thereto look :
Again, if that upon a shelf you place or set a book,
And suffer it there still to stand, the worms will
soon it eat :
A knife likewise, in sheath laid up, the rust will
mar and fret.

¶ The good road-horse, if still at rack he stand,
To resty jade will soon transformed be :
If long untill'd you leave a fertile land,
From streck and weed no place will be left free.

By these examples and such like approve then well
may we,
That idleness more evils doth bring into the mind
of man,
Than labour great in longer time again expel out
can.

¶ Which thing our Author marking well, when
wearied was his mind
From reading grave and ancient works, yet loth his
time to lose,
Bethought himself, to ease his heart, some recre-
ance to find,
And as he mused in his mind, immediately arose
A strange example done of late, which might, as
he suppose,
Stir up their minds to godliness, which should it
see or hear,
And therefore humbly doth you pray to give atten-
tive ear.

¶ The argument or ground, whereon our Author
chiefly stayed,
Is (sure) a history strange and true, to many men
well known,
Of one through love of worldly wealth and fear of
death dismay'd,
Because he would his life and goods have kept still
as his own,
From state of grace wherein he stood was almost
overthrown ;
So that he had no power at all in heart firm faith
to have,
Till at the last God chang'd his mind his mercies
for to crave.

¶ And here our Author thought it meet the true
name to omit,
And at this time imagine him PHILOLOGUS to be ;
First, for because a Comedy will hardly him per-
mit
The vices of one private man to touch particularly :
Again, now shall it stir them more, who shall it
hear or see ;
For if this worldling had been nam'd, we would
straight deem in mind,
That all by him then spoken were, ourselves we
would not find.

¶ But sith PHILOLOGUS is nought else but one that
loves to talk,
And common¹ of the word of God, but hath no
further care,
According as it teacheth them in God's fear for to
walk,
If that we practise this indeed, PHILOGI we are,
And so by his deserved fault we may in time
beware :
Now if, as Author first it meant, you hear it with
this gain,
In good behalf he will esteem that he bestowed his
pain.

¶ And for because we see by proof, that men do
soon forget
Those things for which to call them by no name at
all they know,
Our Author, for to help short wits, did think it
very meet
Some name for this his Comedy in preface for to
show.

¹ [Commune.]

Now names to natures must agree, as every man do
know,
A fitter name he could in mind no where exco-
gitate,
Than THE CONFLICT OF CONSCIENCE the same to
nominate.

¶ A cruel Conflict certainly, where Conscience
takes the foil,
And is constrained by the flesh to yield to deadly
sin,
Whereby the grace and love of God from him his
sin doeth spoil,
Then (wretch accurs'd) small power hath repent-
ance to begin.
This history here example shows of one fast wrapp'd
therein,
As in discourse before your eyes shall plainly proved
be ;
Yet (at the last) God him restor'd, even of his
mercy free.

¶ And though the history of itself be too-too dolor-
ous,
And would constrain a man with tears of blood
his cheeks to wet,
Yet to refresh the minds of them that be the
auditors,
Our Author intermixed hath, in places fit and
meet,
Some honest mirth, yet always 'ware decorum to
exceed.
But list, I hear the players preest in presence forth
to come :
I therefore cease, and take my leave : my message
I have done. [Exit.]

THE CONFLICT OF CONSCIENCE.

ACT I., SCENE 1.

SATAN.

High time it is for me to stir about,
And do my best my kingdom to maintain,
For why I see of enemies a rout,
Which all my laws and statutes do disdain ;
Against my state do fight and strive amain :
Whom in time if I do not dissipate,
I shall repent it, when it is too late.
My mortal foe, the carpenter's poor son,
Against my children—the Pharisees I mean—
Upbraiding them, did use this comparison,
As in the story of his life may be seen.
There was a man which had a vineyard green,
Who, letting it to husbandmen unkind,
Instead of fruit unthankfulness did find.
So that his servants firstly they did beat.
His son likewise they afterward did kill :
And hereupon that man, in fury great,
Did soldiers send these husbandmen to spill ;
Their town to burn he did them also will :
But out alas, alas, for woe I cry,
To use the same far juster cause have I.

For where the kingdom of this world is mine,
 And his on whom I will the same bestow,
 As prince hereof I did myself assign :
 My darling dear, whose faithful love I know,¹
 Shall never fail from me, but daily flow.
 But who that is, perhaps some man may doubt ;
 I will therefore in brief portract and paint him out.
 The mortal man by nature's rule is bound
 That child to favour more than all the rest,
 Which to himself in face is likest found ;
 So that he shall with all his goods be blest :
 Even so do I esteem and like him best,
 Which doth most near my dealings imitate,
 And doth pursue God's laws with deadly hate.
 As therefore I, when once in angel's state
 I was, did think myself with God as mate to be,
 So doth my son himself now elevate
 Above man's nature in rule and dignity.
 So that *in terris Deus sum*, saith he :
 In earth I am a God, with sins for to dispense,
 And for rewards I will forgive each manner of
 offence.

I said to Eve : tush, tush, thou shalt not die,
 But rather shalt as God know everything ;
 My son likewise, to maintain idolatry,
 Saith : tush, what hurt can carved idols bring ?
 Despise this law of God, the heavenly King,
 And set them in the church for men thereon to
 look :

An idol doth much good : it is a layman's book.
 Nembroth,² that tyrant, fearing God's hand,
 By me was persuaded to build up high Babel,
 Whereby he presumed God's wrath to withstand :
 So hath my boy devised very well
 Many pretty toys to keep men's soul from hell,

¹ [The Pope.]

² [Nimrod.]

Live they never so evil here and wickedly,
As masses, trentals, pardons, and scala coeli.
I egged on Pharaoh, of Egypt the king,
The Israelites to kill, so soon as they were born :
My darling likewise doth the selfsame thing,
And therefore causes kings and princes to be sworn,
That with might and main they shall keep up his
 horn,
And shall destroy with fire, axe, and sword,
Such as against him shall speak but one word.
And even as I was somewhat too slow,
So that notwithstanding the Israelites did aug-
 ment ;
So (for lack of murdering) God's people do grow,
And daily increase at this time present ;
Which my son shall feel incontinent.
Yet another practice, this evil to withstand,
He learned of me, which now he takes in hand.
For when as Moses I might not destroy,
Because that he was of the Lord appointed
To bring the people from thralldom to joy,
I did not cease, whilst I had invented,
Another means to have him prevented ;
By accompting himself the son of Pharaoh,
To make him loth Egypt to forego.
The same advice I also attempted
Against the Son of God, when he was incarnate ;
Hoping thereby to have him relented,
And for promotion-sake himself to prostrate
Before my feet, when I did demonstrate
The whole world unto him and all the glory,
As it is recorded in Matthew's history.
So hath the Pope, who is my darling dear,
My eldest boy, in whom I do delight,
Lest he should fall, which thing he greatly fear,
Out of his seat of honour, pomp and might,
Hath got to him, on his behalf to fight,

Two champions stout, of which the one is Avarice,
The other is called Tyrannical Practice.
For, as I said, although I claim by right
The kingdom of this earthly world so round,
And in my stead to rule with force and might
I have assigned the Pope, whose match I nowhere
found,

His heart with love to me so much abound ;
Yet divers men of late, of malice most unkind,
Do study, to displace my son, some wayward means
to find.

Wherefore I marvel much what cause of let there is,
That hitherto they have not their office put in ure.
I will go see: for why I fear that somewhat is amiss ;
If not, to range abroad the world I will them
straight procure :

But needs they must have one to help, men's hearts
for to allure

Unto their train : who that should be, I cannot yet
espy.

No meeter match I can find out than is Hypocrisy ;
Who can full well in time and place dissemble
either part.

No man shall easily perceive with which side he
doth bear ;

But when once favour he hath got, and credit in
man's heart,

He will not slack in mine affairs : I do him no-
thing fear.

But time doth run too fast away for me to tarry
here ;

For¹ none will be enamoured of my shape, I do
know,

I will therefore mine imps send out from hell their
shapes to show. [Exit.

¹ [Because.]

ACT I., SCENE 2.

MATHETES, PHILOGUS.

My mind doth thirst, dear friend Philologus,
Of former talk to make a final end :
And where before we 'gan for to discuss
The cause why God doth such afflictions send
Into his Church, you would some more time spend
In the same cause, that thereby you might learn
Betwixt the wrath and love of God a right for to
discern.

PHILOGUS.

With right good-will to your request herein I do
consent,
As well because, as I perceive, you take therein
delight,
As also for because it is most chiefly pertinent
Unto mine office to instruct and teach each Chris-
tian wight
True godliness, and show to them the path that
leadeth right
Unto God's kingdom, where we shall inherit our
salvation,
Given unto us from God by Christ our true pro-
pitiatio.
But that a better-ordered course herein we may
observe,
And may directly to the first apply that which
ensue,
To speak that hath been said before, I will a time
reserve,
And so proceed from whence we left by course and
order due

Unto the end. At first, therefore, you did lament
and rue
The misery of these our days, and great calamity,
Which those sustain who dare gainsay the Romish
hypocrisy.

MATHETES.

I have just cause, as hath each Christian heart,
To wail and weep, to shed out tears of blood,
When as I call to mind the torments and the
smart,
Which those have borne, who honest be and good,
For nought else, but because their errors they
withstood :
Yet joyed I much to see how patiently
They bore the cross of Christ with constancy.

PHILOLOGUS.

So many of us as into one body be
Incorporate, whereof Christ is the lively head,
As members of our bodies which we see
With joints of love together be conjoined,
And must needs suffer, unless that they be dead,
Some part of grief in mind, which other feel
In body, though not so much by a great deal.
Wherefore by this it is most apparent,
That those two into one body are not united,
Of the which the one doth suffer, the other doth
torment,
And in the wounds of his brother is delighted :
Now which is Christ's body may easily be
decided ;
For the lamb is devoured of the wolf alway,
Not the wolf of the lamb, as Chrysostom doth
say.
Again, of unrighteous Cain murdered was Abel,

By whom the Church of God was figured :
Isaac likewise was persecuted of Ishmael,
As in the Book of Genesis is mentioned :
Israel of Pharaoh was also terrified :
David the saint was afflicted by his son,
And put from his kingdom—I mean by Absalom.
Elias the Thishbite, for fear of Jezebel
Did fly to Horeb, and hid him in a cave :
Michas the prophet, as the story doth tell,
Did hardly his life from Baal's priests save :
Jeremy of that sauce tasted have :
So did Esay, Daniel, and the children three,
And thousands more, which in stories we may see.

MATHETES.

In the New Testament we may also read,
That our Saviour Christ, even in his infancy,
Of Herod the king might stand in great dread,
Who sought to destroy him, such was his
 insolency :
Afterward of the Pharisees he did with constancy
Suffer shameful death : his apostles also
For testimony of the truth did their crosses
 undergo.

PHILOLOGUS.

James, under Herod, was headed with the sword :
The rest of the apostles did suffer much turmoil.
Good Paul was murdered by Nero his word :
Domitian devised a barrel full of oil,
The body of John the Evangelist to boil,
The Pope at this instant sundry torments procure,
For such as by God's holy word will endure.
By these former stories two things we may learn
And profitably record in our remembrance :

The first is God's Church from the devil's to discern :

The second to mark what manifest resistance
The truth of God hath, and what encumbrance
It bringeth upon them that will it profess ;
Wherefore they must arm themselves to suffer distress.

MATHEWES.

It is no new thing, I do now perceive,
That Christ's Church do suffer tribulation ;
But that the same cross I might better receive,
I request you to show me for my consolation,
What is the cause, by your estimation,
That God doth suffer his people to be in thrall,
Yet help them, so soon as they to him call ?

PHILOLOGUS.

The chiefest thing which might us cause or move,
With constant minds Christ's cross for to sustain,
Is to conceive of heaven a faithful love ;
Whereto we may not come, as Paul doth prove it plain,
Unless with Christ we suffer, that with him we may reign :
Again, sith that it is our heavenly Father's will
By worldly woes our carnal lusts to kill.
Moreover, we do use to loathe that thing we always have,
And do delight the more in that which mostly we do want :
Affliction urgeth us also more earnestly to crave,
And when we once relieved be, true faith in us it plant,
So that to call in each distress on God we will not faint :

For trouble brings forth patience, from patience
doth ensue
Experience, from experience hope, of health the
anchor true.
Again, oftentimes God doth provide affliction for our
gain,
As Job, who after loss of goods had twice so much
therefor.
Sometime affliction is a means to honour to attain,
As you may see, if Joseph's life you set your eyes
before :
Continually it doth us warn ~~from~~ sinning any
more,
When as we see the judgments just which God, our
heavenly King,
Upon offenders here in earth for their offences bring.
Sometime God doth it us to prove, if constant we
will be ;
As he did unto Abraham : sometime his whole
intent
Is to declare His heavenly might ; as in John we
may see,
When the disciples did ask Christ why God the
blindness sent
Unto that man that was born blind ? to whom
incontinent
Christ said : Neither for parents' sins, nor for his
own offence,
Was he born blind, but that God might show his
magnificence.

MATHETES.

This is the sum of all your talk, if that I guess
aright,
That God doth punish his elect to keep their faith
in ure,

Or lest that, if continual ease and rest enjoy they
 might,
 God to forget through haughtiness frail nature
 should procure ;
 Or else by feeling punishment our sins for to abjure ;
 Or else to prove our constancy ; or lastly, that we
 may
 Be instruments, in whom his might God may
 abroad display.
 Now must I needs confess to you my former
 ignorance,
 Which knew no cause at all, why God should
 trouble his elect,
 But thought afflictions all to be rewards for our
 offence,
 And to proceed from wrathful judge did alway it
 suspect ;
 As do the common sort of men, who will straight-
 way direct,
 And point their fingers at such men as God doth
 chastise here,
 Esteeming them by just desert their punishment to
 bear.

PHILOLOGUS.

Such is the nature of mankind, himself to justify,
 And to condemn all other men, whereas we ought
 of right
 Accuse ourselves especial, and God to magnify,
 Who in his mercy doth us spare, whereas he also
 might,
 Sith that we do the selfsame things, with like
 plagues us requite :
 Which thing our Saviour Christ doth teach, as
 testifieth Luke,
 The thirteenth chapter, where he doth vainglori-
 ous men rebuke.

But for this time let this suffice : now let us home-ward go,
And further talk in private place, if need be, we will have.

MATHETES.

With right good-will I will attend on you your house unto,
Or else go you with me to mine, the longer journey save ;
For it is now high dinner-time : my stomach meat doth crave.

PHILOLOGUS.

I am soon bidden to my friend : come on ; let us depart.

. MATHETES.

Go you before, and I will come behind with all my heart. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT II., SCENE 1.

HYPOCRISY.

God speed you all that be of God's belief :
The mighty Jehovah protect you from ill.
I beseech the living God, that he would give
To each of you present a hearty good-will
With flesh to contend, your lust for to kill,
That, by the aid of spiritual assistance,
You may subdue your carnal concupiscence.
God grant you all, for his mercy's sake,
The light of his word to your heart's joy.
I humbly beseech him a confusion to make

Of erroneous sects which might you annoy :
Earnestly requiring each one to employ
His whole endeavour God's word to maintain,
And from strange doctrine your hearts to refrain.
Grant, Lord, I pray thee, such preachers to be
In thy congregation, thy people to learn,
As may, for conscience' sake and of mere sincerity,
Being able 'twixt corn and cockle to discern,
Apply their study to replenish the bern ;
That is thy Church, by their doctrines increase,
And make many heirs of thine eternal peace.
Amen. Amen.

But soft, let me see who doth me aspect.
First, sluggish Saturn of nature so cold,
Being placed in Tauro, my beams do reject,
And Luna in Cancro in sextile he behold.
I will the effect hereafter unfold :
Now Jupiter the gentle, of temperature mean,
Poor Mercury the turncoat, he forsook clean.
Now murdering Mars retrograde in Libra,
With amiable tryne apply to my beam ;
And splendent Sol the ruler of the day,
After his eclipse to Jupiter will lean :
The goddess of pleasure (dame Venus, I mean)
To me her poor servant seem friendly to be :
So also doth Luna, otherwise called Phœbe.
But now I speak mischievously, I would say, in a
mystery ;

Wherefore, to interpret it, I hold it best done,
For here be a good sort, I believe, in this company,
That know not my meaning, as this man for one.
What ! blush not at it ; you are not alone :
Here is another that know not my mind,
Nor he in my words great favour can find.
The planet Mercurius is neither hot nor cold,
Neither good, nor yet very bad of his own nature,
But doth alter his quality with them, which do hold

Any friendly aspect to him : even so I assure
We Mercurialists, I mean hypocrites, cannot long
endure

In one condition, but do alter our mind
To theirs that talk with us, thereby friendship to
find.

The littleameleon, by nature, can change
Herself to that colour to which she behold :
Why should it then to any seem strange,
That we do thus alter ? why are we controll'd,
Sith only the rule of nature we hold ?
We seek to please all men, yet most do us hate,
And we are rewarded for friendship debate.
Saturnus is envious ; how then can he love
Adulation or Hypocrisy, to him most contrary ?
The Jovists, being good, do look high above,
And do not regard the rest of the company.
Now Mars, being retrograde, foretelleth misery
To tyrannical practice to happen eftsoon,
As shall be apparent before all be done.

Which Tyranny with flattery is easily pacified ;
Whereas Tom Tell-troth shall feel of his sword ;
So that with such men is fully verified
That old-said saw, and common byword,
Obsequium amicos—by flatteries friends are pre-
pared,

But *veritas odium parit*, as commonly is seen :
For speaking the truth many hated have been.
By Sol understand Popish principality,
With whom full highly I am entertained,
But being eclipsed shall show forth his quality ;
Then shall Hypocrisy be utterly disdained,
Whose wretched exile, though greatly complained,
And wept for of many, shall be without hope,
That in such pomp shall ever be Pope.
By Venus the riotous, by Luna the variable,
Betwixt whom and Mercury no variance can fall,

For they, which in words be most unstable,
 Would be thought faithful, and the riotous liberal :
 So that Hypocrisy their doings cloak shall.
 But whist ! not a word, for yonder come some :
 While I know what they are, I will be dumb.
[Step aside.]

ACT II, SCENE 2.

TYRANNY, AVARICE.

Put me before, for I will shift for one,
[Push AVARICE backward.]

So long as strength remaineth in this arm :
 And pluck up thy heart, thou faint-hearted mome :
 As long as I live thou shalt take no harm.
 Such as control us, I will their tongues charm
 By fire or sword, or other like torment,
 So that ever they did it, they shall it repent.
 Hast thou forgotten what Satan did say,
 HYP. Am- That the k[nave] Hypocrisy our doings should
 bo.¹ hide,

So that under his cloak our parts we should play,
 And of the rude people should never be spied ?
 Or if the worst should hap or betide,
 That I by Tyranny should both you defend
 Against such as mischief to you should pretend.

AVARICE.

Indeed, such words our Belsire did speak,
 HYP. Tut, Which, being remembered, doth make my heart
 Father Jot- glad ;
 sam !

¹ [This and the other marginalia are Hypocrisy's *asides*.
 By *Ambo* he seems to signify, You knaves, the two of you !]

But yet one thing my courage doth break,
 And when I think of it, it makes me full sad :
 I mean the evil luck which Hypocrisy had,
 When he was expelled out of this land ;
 For then with me the matter evil did stand.
 For I by him so shadowed was from light,
 That almost no man could me out espy ;
 But he being gone, to every man's sight
 I was apparent : each man did descry
 My pilling and polling ; so that glad was I
 From my nature to cease, a thing most marvellous,
 And live in secret, the time was so dangerous.

HYP. A little k[naue] to hide so great a lubber.

TYRANNY.

Tush ! Avarice, thou fearest a thing that is vain,
 For by me alone both you shall be stayed ;
 And, if thou mark well, thou shalt perceive plain
 That if I, Tyranny, my part had well played,
 And from killing of heretics my hand had not
 stayed,
 They had never grown to such a great rout,
 Neither should have been able to have banish'd
 him out.

HYP. He feareth nothing : he thinketh the hangman is dead.

HYP. He can play two parts, the fool and the k[naue].

But *sero sapient Phryges* : at length I will take heed,

And with blood enough this evil will prevent ;
 For if I hear of any that in word or in deed—
 Yea, if it be possible to know their intent,
 If I can prove that in thought they it meant
 To impair our estates—no prayer shall serve,
 But will pay them their hire, as each one deserve.

HYP. A popish policy !

HYP. Anti-christian charity.

AVARICE.

The fish once taken, and 'scaped from bait,
 Will ever hereafter beware of the hook :

VOL. VI.

D

Such as use hunting will spy the hare straight,
 Though other discern her not, yet on her shall look.
 Again, the learned can read in a book,
 Though the unskilful, seeing equal with them,
 Cannot discern an F from an M.
 So those which have tasted the fruit that we bear,
 And find it so sour, will not us implant.

TYRANNY.

Tush! Avarice, I warrant thee, thou need'st not
 fear:

[HYE.] *Uti-* In the clergy, I know, no friends we shall want,
litas facit Which for hope of gain the truth will recant,
esse Deos. And give themselves wholly to set out Hypocrisy,
 Being egg'd on with Avarice, and defended by
 Tyranny.

AVARICE.

Well may the clergy on our side hold,
 For they by us no small gain did reap;
 But all the temporality, I dare be bold
 To venture in wager of gold a good heap,
 At our preferments will mourn, wail, and weep.

TYRANNY.

HYE. This Though indeed no just cause of joy they can find,
 is sharp Yet for fear of my sword they will alter their mind.
 argumenta. But I marvel much where Hypocrisy is:
 Methink it is long since from us he did go.

AVARICE.

I doubt that of his purpose he miss,
 HYE. Pray And therefore hath hanged himself for woe.
 for your- How say'st thou, Tyranny, dost not think so?
 self.

In faith, if I thought that he might be spared,
And we have our purpose, beshrew me, if I cared.

TYRANNY.

Saw you ever the like of this doubting dolt ?
It grieves me to hear how faint-hearted he is.

[*Aside.*

A little would cause me to kill thee, thou ass-colt.
See, see, for woe he is like for to piss :
To give an attempt what a fellow were this ?
But this is the good that cometh of Covetousness :
He liveth alway in fear to lose his riches.
Again, mark how he regardeth the death of his
friend :

So he hath his purpose, he cares for no mo :
A perfect pattern of a covetous mind,
Which neither esteemeth his friend nor his foe,
But rather, Avarice, might I have said so,
Who, if he were gone, myself could defend,
Where thou by his absence wert soon at an end.

[*Exeunt.*

ACT II, SCENE 3.

HYPOCRISY.

O loving Father and merciful God !
We through our sins thy punishment deserve,
And have provoked to beat with thy rod
Us stubborn children, which from thee do swerve.
We loathed thy word, but now we shall sterve ;
For Hypocrisy is placed again in this land,
And thy true gospel as exile doth stand.
This is thy just judgment for our offence,
Who having the light in darkness did stray,
But now, if thou wouldest of thy fatherly benevo-
lence

HYP. Your
kind heart
shall cost
me a couple
of rushes.
HYP. Not
I the like
of such a
cutthroat
colt.

Thy purposed judgments in wrath for to stay,
 The part of the prodigal son we would play ;
 And with bitter tears before thee would fall,
 And in true repentance for mercy would call
 In our prosperity we would not regard
 The words of the preachers, who threat'ned the
 same,
 But flattering ourselves, thought thou wouldest
 have spared
 Us in thy mercy, and never us blame :
 But so much provoked thee by blaspheming thy
 name,
 Indeed to deny that in words we maintain,
 That from thy justice thou could'st not refrain.
 So that Romish Pharaoh, a tyrant most cruel,
 Hath brought us again into captivity,
 And instead of the pure flood of thy gospel,
 Hath poisoned our souls with devilish Hypocrisy,
 Unable to maintain it, but by murdering
 Tyranny ;
 Seeking rather the fleece than the health of the
 sheep,
 Which are appointed for him for to keep.

[*Re-enter AVAR. and TYR.*]

TYRANNY.

HYP.
 [*aside.*]
 He
 speaketh
 to you,
 Syra.

Lo, Avarice, hark what a traitor is here,
 Against our holy Father this language to use !
 I might have heard more, if I would him forbear,
 But for grief my ears burn to hear him abuse
 His tongue in this manner : wherefore no excuse
 Shall purchase favour, but that with all speed
 By sword I will render to him his due meed.
 Wherefore, thou miscreant, while thou hast time,

Pray to the saints thy spokesman to be,
That at God's hand from this thy great crime
By their intercession thou may be set free.

AVARICE.

Nay, hearest thou, Tyranny ! be ruled by me :
First cut off his head, and then let him pray,
So shall he be sure us not to bewray.

HYPOCRISY.

O wicked Tyranny ! thou imp of the devil,
Too joyful tidings to thee have I brought,
For now thou art emboldened to practise all evil.

TYRANNY.

Marry, thou shalt not give me thy service for
nought,
But for thy pains to please thee I thought.

HYPOCRISY.

Thou art nothing so ready to do any good,
As thou art to shed poor innocents' blood.

AVARICE.

Nay, Tyranny, suffer this rascal to prate,
Till some man come by, and then he is gone.
Then wilt thou repent it, when it is too late :
Despatch him, therefore, while we are alone.

HYP.
[aside.]
On your
face, sir.

HYPOCRISY.

Well may the covetous be likened to a drone,
Which of the bee's labours will spoil and waste
make,

And yet to get honey no labour will take.
 The covetous likewise from poor men extort,
 Their gains to increase they only do seek ;
 And so they may have it, of them a great sort
 What means they use for it they care not a leek :
 Yet will these misers scarce once a week
 Have one good meal at their own table :
 So by Avarice to help themselves they are unable.
 Avarice to a fire may well compared be,
 To the which the more you add, the more still it
 crave :
 So likewise the covetous mind we do see,
 Though riches abound, do wish still more to have
 And to be short, your reverences to save,
 To a filthy swine such misers are comparable,
 Which, while¹ they be dead, are nothing profitable.

AVARICE.

Nay, farewell, Tyranny : I came hither too soon,
 I perceive already I am too well known.
 I were not best in their claws for to come,
 Unless I were willing to be clean overthrown.

TYRANNY.

By the preaching of God's word all this mischief
 is grown,
 Which if Hypocrisy might happily expel,
 All we in safety and pleasure might dwell.
 Stay, therefore, while from Hypocrisy we hear.

AVARICE.

Despatch then this merchant,² lest our counsel he
 tell.

¹ [Until.]

² [Fellow.]

HYPOCRISY.

I am content for God's cause this cross for to bear.

TYRANNY.

It is best killing him now his mind is set well.

HYPOCRISY.

Your scoffing and mocking God seeth each deal.

TYRANNY.

Yea, dost thou persist us still thus to check ?
Thy speech I will hinder by cutting off thy neck.

HYPOCRISY.

Nay, hold thy hand, Cadby, thou hast kill'd me
enough.
What ! never the sooner for a merry word.
I meant not good earnest, to your maship I vow.
I did but jest, and spake but in bord :
Therefore of friendship put up again thy sword.

TYRANNY.

Nay, caitiff, presume not that thou shalt go scot-
free ;
Therefore, hold still, and I will soon despatch thee.

HYPOCRISY.

What ! I pray thee, Tyranny, know first who I
am.
Ye purblind fools, do your lips blind your eyes ?
Why, I was in place long before you came ;

See how to my face they do me deride [*Aside*];
I will not therefore in your companies abide.

AVARICE.

Why, Master Hypocrisy, what would you that I do ?
For my offence of mercy I you pray.

HYPOCRISY.

With thee I am at one ; but of that merchant too
I look for some amends, or else I will away.

TYRANNY.

The presumptuous fool's part herein thou dost play.
What ! of thy master dost thou look for obeisance ?
I will not once entreat thee : if thou wilt, get thee
hence.

HYPOCRISY.

Nimia familiaritas parit contemptum,
The old proverb by me is verified,
By too much familiarity contemned be some :
Even so at this present to me it betide.
For of long time Hypocrisy hath ruled as guide,
While now, of later days, through heretics' resist-
ance,
I retained Tyranny to yield me assistance ;
But through overmuch levity he thinks himself
checkmate
With me his good patron, Master Hypocrisy.

TYRANNY.

List, I pray thee, Avarice, how this rascal can prate,
And with me Tyranny doth challenge equality ;

Where he of himself hath neither strength nor
 hability ;
 But thou to him riches, and I strength, do give,
 So that I must be his master, though it doth him
 grieve.

AVARICE.

Two dogs oftentimes one bone would fain catch,
 But yet the third do them both deceive.
 Even so Hypocrisy for the pre-eminence doth
 snatch,
 Which Tyranny gapes for, ye may perceive :
 But I must obtain it ; for of me they retain
 All kind of riches, their states to maintain,
 To yield to me, therefore, they must be both fain.
[*Aside.*]

HYPOCRISY.

Was Judas Christ's master, because he bare the
 purse ?
 Nay, rather of all he was least regarded,
 Have not men of honour stewards to disburse
 All such sums of money wherewith they be
 charged ?
 Yet above their master their honour is not
 enlarged :
 Even so thee, Avarice, my steward I account,
 To pay that whereto my charges amount.
 And to thee, Tyranny, this one word I object :
 Whether was Joab or David the king ?
 When Joab was glad his ease to reject,
 The Ammonites in Rabah to confusion to bring,
 When David with Bathsheba at home was sleep-
 ing,
 Was not Joab, his servant, in warfare to fight ?
 And so art thou mine, mine enemies to quite.

TYRANNY.

Nay, then, at the whole God give you good night,
Shall Tyranny to Hypocrisy in any point yield ?

HYPOCRISY.

With this one word I will vanquish thee quite,
That thou shalt be glad to give me the field.
The end to be preferred all learned men wield :
Sith therefore Hypocrisy of Tyranny is end,
I must have the preferment for which I contend.

AVA. In-
deed you
say troth.

TYRANNY.

I will make you both grant that I am the chief,
Or else with my sword your sides I will pierce.

HYPOCRISY.

That were sharp reasoning indeed, with a mischief !

AVARICE.

I will yield him my right, if that he be so fierce.

HYPOCRISY.

The nature of hypocrites herein we rehearse ;
Which, being convinced by the text of God's word,
The end of their spouting is fire and sword.
But if you will needs be chief, God speed well the
plough :

I will be none that shall follow your train ;
For if I should, I know well enough
That to fly the country we all should be fain :
Then were my labour done but in vain.
You know not so much as I do, Tyranny,
Therefore, I advise you, be ruled by me.

TYRANNY.

Inter amicos omnia sunt communia, they say :
 Among friends there is reckoned no property,
 But that the one hath of his own, th' other may
 Have the use of the same at his own liberty,
 Even so among us it is of a surety ;
 For what the one hath of his own proper right,
 It is thine to use by day or by night.

AVARICE.

HYP. He
 hath
 learned
 logeres.¹

Indeed you say truth, the end is worth all ;
 Such things as to get the end are referred,
 And by this reason to you I prove shall,
 That I before Hypocrisy must be preferred :
 The conclusion of my reason is this ² inferred ;
 Sith Hypocrisy was invented to augment private
 gain,
 I am the end of Hypocrisy : this is plain.

HYPOCRISY.

Actum est de amicitia, the bargain is despatched,
 And we two in friendship are united as one.

AVARICE.

In the same knot with you let me also be matched,
 And of money, I warrant you, you shall want none.

HYPOCRISY.

I agree ; what say you ? shall he be one ?

TYRANNY.

HYP.
 Friendship
 for gain.

I judge him needful in our company to be,
 And therefore, for my part, he is welcome to me.

¹ [Query, *logic*.]

² [Thua.]

Let us now speedily on our business attend,
And labour each one to bring it about.

HYPOCRISY.

That is already by me brought to end,
So that of your preferment you need not to doubt ;
And my coming hither was to find you out,
That at my elbow you might be in readiness,
To help, if need were, in this weighty business.
To tell you the story it were but too tedious,
How the Pope and I together have devised,
Firstly to inveigle the people religious,
For greediness of gain who will be soon pressed :
And, for fear lest hereafter they should be despised,
Of their own freewill will maintain Hypocrisy,
So that Avarice alone shall conquer the clergy.
Now, of the chiefest of his carnal cardinals
He doth appoint certain, and give them authority
To ride abroad in their pontificals,
To see if with Avarice they may win the laity ;
If not, then to threaten them with open Tyranny :
Whereby doubt not but many will forsake
The truth of the gospel, and our parties take.

TYRANNY.

This device is praiseworthy : how say'st thou,
Avarice ?

AVARICE.

I like it well, if it were put in ure,
Yet little gain to me shall this whole practice,
More than I had before-time, procure.

HYPOCRISY.

The legates are ready to ride, I am sure ;

Wherefore we had need to make no small delay :
 They stay for my coming alone, I dare say.
 Howbeit the laity would greatly mislike,
 If they should know all our purpose and intent ;
 Yea, and perhaps some means they would seek
 Our foresaid business in time to prevent.

TYRANNY.

Will you then be ruled by my arbitrament ?
 Lest the people should suddenly dissolve tranquility,
 For the legate's defence, let him use me Tyranny.

HYPOCRISY.

Herein your counsel is not much unwise,
 Save that in one thing we had need to beware :
 Lest you be known, we will you disguise,
 And some grave apparel for you will prepare ;
 But your name, Tyranny, I fear all will mar :
 Let me alone, and I will invent
 A name to your nature, which shall be convenient.
 Zeal shall your name be : how like you by that ?
 And therefore in office you must deal zealously.

TYRANNY.

Let me alone, I will pay them home pat :
 Though they call me Zeal, they shall feel me
 Tyranny. *[Aside.]*

HYPOCRISY.

Lo, here is a garment : come, dress you handsomely.
 Ay, marry (quoth he), I like this very well :
 Now to the devil's grace you me seem to give
 counsel

Now must I apply all my invention,
That I may devise Avarice to hide.
Thy name shall be called Careful Provision,
And every man for his household may lawfully
provide :
Thus shalt thou go cloaked, and never be spied.

AVARICE.

Thy counsel, Hypocrisy, I very well allow,
And will recompense thee, if ever I know how.

TYRANNY.

Now on a boon¹ voyage let us depart,
For I [am] well loth any time to delay.

HYPOCRISY.

Nay, yet in sign of a merry heart,
Let us sing before we go away.

AVARICE.

I am content ; begin, I you pray ;
But to sing the treble, we must needs have one.

HYPOCRISY.

If you say so, let it even alone. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT III, SCENE 1.

PHILOLOGUS.

Too true, alas, too true, I say, was our divination,
The which Mathetes did foresee, when last we were
in place ;

¹ [Good.]

For now indeed we feel the smart and horrible
vexation,
Which Romish power unto us did threaten and
menace.
Wherefore great need we have to call to God
alway for grace ;
For feeble flesh is far too weak those pains to
undergo,
The which all they that fear the Lord are now
appointed to.
The legate from the Pope of Rome is come into
our coasts,
Who doth the saints of God each where with
tyranny oppress,
And in the same most gloriously himself he vaunt
and boast ;
The more one mourneth unto him he pitieth the less.
Out of his cruel tyranny the Lord of heaven me
bless ;
For hitherto in blessed state my whole life I have
spent,
With health of body, wealth in goods, and mind
alway content.
Besides, of friends I have great store, who do me
firmly love :
A faithful wife and children fair, of woods and
pasture store,
And divers other things which I have got for my
behoof,
Which now to be deprived of would grieve my
heart full sore.
And if I come once in their claws, I shall get out
no more,
Unless I will renounce my faith, and so their mind
fulfil ;
Which if I do, without all doubt my soul for aye I
spill,

For sith I have received once the first-fruits of my
faith,
And have begun to run the course that leadeth to
salvation,
If in the midst thereof I stay or cease, the Scripture
saith
It booteth not that I began with so good prepara-
tion ;
But rather maketh much the more unto my condem-
nation :
For he alone shall have the palm which to the end
doth run,
And he which plucks his hand from plough, in
heaven shall never come.
Those labourers which hired were in vineyard for
to moil,
And had their penny for their pain, they tarried
all while night ;
For if they ceased had, when sun their flesh with
heat did broil,
And had departed from their work, they should
have lost by right
Their wages-penny : I likewise shall be deprived
quite
Of that same crown, the which I have in faith long
looked for.
But for this time I will depart : I dare here stay
no more. [Exit.]

ACT III, SCENE 2.

HYPOCRISY.

Ha, ha, ha ! marry, now the game begins.
Hypocrisy throughout this realm is had in admira-
tion,

VOL. VI.

E

And by my means both Avarice and Tyranny
crept in,
Who in short space will make men run the way to
desolation.
What did I say? my tongue did trip—I should say,
consolation—
For now, forsooth, the clergy must into my bosom
creep,
Or else they know not by what means themselves
alive to keep.
On the other side the laity, be they either rich or
poor—
If rich, then Avarice strangle them, because they
will not lose
Their worldly wealth: or else we have one subtle
practice more;
That is, that Sensual Suggestion their outward man
shall pose,
Who can full finely in each cause his mind to them
disclose.
But if that neither of these twain can to my train
them win,¹
Then at his cue to play his part doth Tyranny
begin.
As for the poor knaves, such a one as this is,
We do not esteem him, but make short ado.
If he will not come on, we do him not miss,
But to the pot he is sure to go:
Tyranny deals with him and no mo.
But I marvel what doth him from hence so long
stay,
Sooner named, sooner come, as common proverbs
say. [S[tep aside.

¹ [Old copy, *wynde*.]

ACT III, SCENE 3.

TYRANNY, AVARICE, HYPOCRISY.

By his wounds, I fear not, but it is cock sure¹ now.
 Under the legate's seal, in office I am placed :
 Therefore whoso resist me, I will make him to bow.
 Who can make Tyranny now be disgraced ?
 With a head of brass I will not be outfaced,
 But will execute mine office with extreme cruelty,
 So that all men shall know me to be plain Tyranny.

HYP. He
 hath a
 goodly
 grace in
 swearing.

HYP. He
 is graceless
 already.

AVARICE.

Nay, Master Zeal, be ruled by me :
 To such as resist such rigour you may show.

TYRANNY.

Zeal? nay, no Zeal ; my name is Tyranny :
 Neither am I ashamed who doth my name know,
 For in my dealings the same I will show,
 None dare reprove me, of that I am sure,
 So long as authority on my side endure.
 But to thy words a while I will list ;
 Therefore in brief say on what you will.

HYP. He
 is Kit
 Careless.

AVARICE.

I would have you show rigour to such as resist,
 And such as be obstinate spare not to kill ;
 But those that be willing your hests to fulfil,

¹ [See Hazlitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 103. The origin of the term there suggested seems to be supported by the words put into the mouth of *Hypocrisy* here.]

HYP. Hark If they offend, and not of obstinacy,
 the prac- For money excuse them, though they use villany,
 tice of Thus shall you perform your office aright,
 spiteful For favour or money to spare the offender.
 Sumnors.

TYRANNY.

So may I also, of malice or spite,
 Or rancour of mind,¹ punish the innocent.
 But I will be ruled by thine arbitrament,
 And will favour such as will my hand grease.
HYP. And The devil is a good fellow, if one can him please :²
 you are But to follow our business great pains we do take ;
 one of his On an hasty message we were fit to be sent.
 sons, me-
 think, by
 your head

HYPOCRISY [*Aside*].

When I lie a-dying, I will you messengers make :
 You ply you so fast, you are too-too diligent.
 Whoop how, Master Zeal, whither are ye bent ?

AVARICE.

Hark ! methought one hallooed, and called you by
 name.

TYRANNY.

I would it were Hypocrisy.

AVARICE.

It is the very same.
 What, Master Hypocrisy, for you I have sought
 This hour or two, but could you not find.

¹ [Old copy, *myne*.]

² [There is a proverb: "The devil is good when he is pleased."]

HYPOCRISY.

That is no marvel, it is not for nought,
For I am but little, and you two are blind ;
Neither have you eyes to see with behind :
Yet may the learned note herein a mystery,
That neither Tyranny nor Avarice can find out
Hypocrisy.

But what earnest business have you in charge,
That with so great speed must presently be finished ?

TYRANNY.

Marry, see here.

HYPOCRISY.

What is it ?

TYRANNY.

A commission large
From my Lord Legate himself authorised,
The effect whereof must presently be practised.

HYPOCRISY.

What is the tenure,¹ I pray you let me know ?

TYRANNY.

Avarice hath read it, not I ; let him show.

AVARICE.

He hath firstly in charge to make inquisition,

¹ [Tenor.]

Whether altars be re-edified, whether chalice and
 book,
 Vestments for mass, sacraments, and procession,
 Be prepared again : if not, he must look,
 And find out such fellows as these cannot brook,
 And to my Lord Legate such merchants present,
 That for their offence they may have condign
 punishment.
 If any we take tardy, Tyranny them threat,
 That for their negligence he will them present ;
 And I desirous some money to get,
 If ought they will give me, their evil will prevent ;
 Yea, sometime of purpose such shifts we invent.

HYPOCRISY.

Peace, yonder comes one ; methink it is a priest,
 By his gown, cap, and tippet made of a list.

ACT III., SCENE 4.

CACONOS, HYPOCRISY, TYRANNY, AVARICE.

In¹ gude feth, sir, this newis de gar me lope,
 Ay is as light as ay me wend, gif that yo wol me
 troth,
 Far new agen within awer lond installed is the
 Pope,
 Whese legat with authority tharawawt awr
 country goth,
 And charge before him far te com us priests end
 lemen hath,

¹ [The priest is made to speak what the author seems to have taken for the Scottish dialect.]

Far te spay swt, gif that he mea, these new-sprang
arataics,
Whilk de disturb aur hally Kirk, laik a sart of
saysmatics.
Awr gilden Gods ar brought ayen intea awr kirks
ilkwhare,
That unte tham awr parishioner ma offer thar
gude-will.
For hally mass in ilk place new thea antars de
prepare,
Hally water, pax, cross, banner, censer and candill,
Cream, crismatory, hally bread, the rest omit ay
will,
Whilt hally fathers did invent fre awd antiquity,
Be new received into awr kirks with great solem-
nity.
Bay these thaugh lemen been apprest, the clargy
all het gean,
Far te awr sents theis affer yifts all whilk we sall
receive :
Awr hally mass, thaw thea bay dere, thea de it but
in vain,
Far thaw ther frends frea Purgatory te help thea
dea believe,
Yet af ther hope, gif need rewhayre,¹ it wawd
theam all deceive.
Sea wawd awr pilgrimage, reliques, trentals, and
pardons,
Whilk far awr geyn into awr Kirk ar braught in
far the nonce.
Far well a nere what war awr tenths and taythes
that gro in fild,
What gif we han of glebed lond ene plawwark bay
the year,

¹ [The writer should have written *reguhair*, if anything of the kind ; but his Scotch is deplorably imperfect.]

Awr affring deas de vara laytell ar nething te us
yield :

Awr beadroll geanes, awr chrisom clothes de laytle
mend awr fare

Gif awt af this we pea far vale, we laytle mare can
spare.

Sawl-masses, diriges, monethmayndes and buryings,
Alsewlneday, kirkings, banasking and weddings.

The sacraments, gif we mowt sell, war better than
thea all ;

Far gif the Jews gave thratty pence te hang
Chraist on a tree,

Gude Christian folk thrayse thratty pence wawd
count a price but small ;

Sea that te eat him with their teeth delaivered he
mawght be.

New of this thing delaiverance ne man can make
but we,

Se that the market in this punt we priests sawd
han at will,

And with the money we sowd yet awr pooches we
sowd fill.

HYPOCRISY.

I will go and salute him : good morrow, Sir John.¹

CACON.

Naw, bay may priest-hade, God give ye ten far ene.

HYPOCRISY.

Do you, Master Parson, in this parish sing ?

¹ [The usual style in which priests and clergymen were
anciently addressed. Instances are too numerous to require
citation.]

CACON.

Yai, sir, that ay de, gif yowl give me trothing.

TYRANNY.

I have a commission your house and church to seek,
To search if you any seditious books do keep.

CACON.

Whe ay ? well a near, ay swear bay the Sacrament,
Ay had rather han a cup af nale than a Testament.

HYPOCRISY.

How can you without it your office discharge ?

CACON.

It is the least thing ay car far, bay may charge ;
Far se lang as thea han images wharon te luke,
What need thea be distructed awt af a buik ?

HYPOCRISY.

Tush ! that will modify them all well enou' :
As well a dead image as a dumb idol, I make God
avow.

CACON.

Yai, ay my sen bay experience thot con show ;
Far in may portace the tongue ay de nat know,
Yet when ay see the great gilded letter,
Ay ken it sea well, as nea man ken better.
As far example : on the day of Chraist's nativity,
Ay see a bab in a manger and two beasts standing
by :

The service whilk to Newyear's-day is assaig'n'd
 Bay the paicture of the circumcision ay faynd :
 The service, whilk on Twalfth-day mun be done,
 Ay seeke bay the mark of the three kings of
 Cologne.

Bay the devil tenting Chraist ay find whadrage-
 sima :

Bay Chraist on the cross ay serch out gude-fraiday.
 Pasch for his mark hath the Resurrection :

Ayenst Hally-Thursaday is pented Chraist's ascen-
 sion :

Thus in mayn own buke ay is a gude clerk ;
 But gif the sents war gone, the cat had eat my
 mark.

Se the sandry mairacles, whilk ilk sent have done,
 Bay the pictures on the walls sal appear to them
 soon,

Bay the whilk thea ar learned in every distress,
 What sent thea mun prea te far succour, doubtless :
 Sea that all lepers to Sylvester must prea,
 That he wawd frae tham ther disease take away.

Laykwais, thea that han the falling saickness,
 Te be eased therfre thea mun prea to Sent Cornelis :

In contagious air, as in plague or pestilence,
 Te hally Sent-Ruke¹ thea mun call far assistance.

Fra paril of drawning Sent Carp keep the
 mariners :

Fra dayng in warfare Sent George guard the sol-
 diers :

Sent Job heal the poor, the ague Sent German :
 For te ease the toothache call te Sent Appolline.²

Gif that a woman be barren and childless,
 Te help her herein she must prea te Sent Nicholas.
 Far wemen in travail call to Sent Magdalen ;

¹ [St. Rock.]

² [This passage was unknown to Brand and his editors.]

Far lawliness of mind call to Sent Katherine,
Sent Loy save your horse, Sent Anthony your
swine.

TYRANNY.

What ! this parson seemeth cunning to be,
And, as far as I see, in a good uniformity.
Yea, he is well read in that Golden Legend.

CACON.

Bay may troth, in reading any other ne taym do I
spend,
Far that, ay ken, bay general caunsel is canonised,
And bay the hely Pope himself is authorised :
That buke farther is wholly permitted,
Wharas the Baible in part is prohibited.
And therefore, gif it be lawful to utter my con-
science,
Before the New Testament ays give it credence.

HYPOCRISY.

I allow his judgment before Ambrose and Austin,
And for Hypocrisy a more convenient chaplain.

AVARICE.

It grieveth me much that no fault we can spy,
For now of some bribe disappointed am I ;
Yet happily he may tell us of some heretics.

TYRANNY.

Is there, Mast. Parson, in your parish no schis-
matics ?

CACON.

Yai, mara, is ther a vara busybody,
 Whe will jest with me and call me fule and noddy,
 And sets his lads te spout Latin ayenst me,
 But ay spose then with *Deparfundis Clam awi* :
 And oftentimes he wil reason with me of the
 Sacarment,
 And say he can prove bay the New Testament
 That Chraist's body is in heaven placed ;
 But ays not believe him, ay woll not be awt-faced.
 He says besayd that the Pope is Antichraist,
 Fugered of John bay the seven-headed beast,
 And all awre religion is but mon's invention,
 And with God's ward is at utter dissension ;
 And a plaguy deal mare of sayk layk talk,
 That ay dar not far may narse bay his yate walk,
 But ay wawd he wer brunt, that ay mawght be
 whaiet.¹

TYRANNY.

He must have a cooler ; his tongue runs at riot.

AVARICE.

What is his name, Sir John, canst thou tell us ?

CACON.

Yai, sir, that ay ken : he is cleped Phaillelegooa.

TYRANNY.

Wilt thou go show his house, where he dwell ?

¹ [Quiet.]

CACON.

Yai, or els ay wawd may sawl war in hell.
Te de him a pleasure ay wawd gang a whole year,
Gif it war but te make him a fadock¹ te bear.

TYRANNY.

Go with us, Avarice, and bear us company.

AVARICE.

Nay, if you go hence, I will not here tarry.

HYPOCRISY.

Away, sirs : in your business in a corner do not
lurk,
That my Lord Legate, when he comes, may have
work.

TYRANNY.

Come on : let us go together, Sir John.

CACON.

Ay sall follow after. God boy, you good gentleman.

HYPOCRISY [*Aside.*]

Farewell three false knaves as between this and
London !

TYRANNY.

What say'st thou ?

¹ [Fagot.]

HYPOCRISY.

As honest men as the three Kings of Cologne.

[*Exeunt* TYR. AVA. CACON.]

This gear goes round, if that we had a fiddle :

Nay, I must sing too, *heigh, dery, dery, dery*.

I can do but laugh, my heart is so merry :

I will be minstrel myself, *heigh, didle, didle, didle* ;

But lay there a straw I began to be weary.

But hark ; I hear a trampling of feet.

It is my Lord Legate ; I will him go meet.

ACT IV., SCENE 1.

CAR[DINAL]. HYP. AVA. TYR. PHILO.

Go to, Master Zeal,¹ bring forth that heretic,
Which doth thus disturb our religion catholic.

HYPOCRISY.

Room for my lord's grace ! what ! no manner
reverence,

But cap on head, Hodge, and that in a lord's
presence ?

CARDINAL.

What, Master Hypocrisy, I have stayed for you
long.

HYPOCRISY [*Aside*].

You were best crowd in, and play us among.

¹ [*i.e.*, Tyranny, who disguises his identity, and goes under the name of Zeal.]

CARDINAL.

Where have you been from me so long absent?
I appointed to have been here three hours ago,
In my consistory to have sat in judgment
Of that wretched schismatic that doth trouble us so.

HYPOCRISY.

What, have you caught but one, and no mo?
In faith, father Avarice, you have plied your chaps
well.

AVARICE.

I must needs confess that I am paid for my travail.

TYRANNY.

Room for the prisoner! what, room on each hand,
Or I shall make some out of the way for te stand.
Lo, here, my lord, is that seditious, schismatic,
That we have laid wait for, an arrant heretic.

[Enter PHILOLOGUS.]

CARDINAL.

Sit down, Master Hypocrisy, to yield me assistance.

HYPOCRISY.

I thank your lordship for your courteous benevo-
lence.
I will be the noddy—I should say the notary,
To write before my Lord Legate, which is com-
missary.

CARDINAL.

Ah, sirrah! be you he that doth thus disturb
The whole estate of our faith catholic!

Art thou so expert in God's laws and word,
That no man may learn thee, thou arrant heretic?
But this is the nature of every schismatic:
Be his errors never so false doctrine,
He will say by God's word he dare it examine.

PHILOLOGUS.

With humble submission to your authority,
I pardon crave, if ought amiss I say;
For being thus set in peril and extremity,
To me unacquainted, my tongue soon trip may:
Wherefore excuse me, I do your lordship pray,
And I will answer to every demand,
According to my conscience, God's word being my
warrant.

CARDINAL.

To begin therefore orderly: how say'st thou, Philo-
logus,
Have I authority to call thee me before?
Or, to be short, I will object it thus:
Whether hath the Pope, which is Peter's successor,
Than all other bishops preheminance more?
If not, then it follow that neither he,
Nor I which am his legate, to accompts may call
thee.

PHILOLOGUS.

The question is perilous for me to determine,
Chiefly when the party is judge in the cause;
Yet, if the whole course of Scripture ye examine,
And will be tried by God's holy laws,
Small help shall you find to defend the same cause,
But the contrary may be proved manifestly,
As I in short words will prove to you briefly.
The surest ground, whereon your Pope doth stand,

Is of Peter's being at Rome a strong imagination,
And the same Peter, you do understand,
Of all the disciples had the gubernation,
Surmising both without good approbation,
Unless you will by the name of Babylon,
From whence Peter wrote, is understood Rome.
As indeed divers of your writers have affirmed,
Reciting Jerome, Austin, Primatius, and Ambrose,
Who by their several writings have confirmed
That Rome is New Babylon : I may it not glose.
But it were better for you they were dumb, I
suppose,

For they labour to prove Rome by that acception
The whore of Babylon, spoke of in the Revelation.
But grant that Peter in Rome settled was,
Yet that he was chief it remains you to prove ;
For in my judgment it is a plain case,
That if any amongst them to rule it did behove,
He should be the chief, whom Christ most did
love ;

To whom he bequeathed his mother most dear,
To whom in revelation Christ did also appear.
I mean John Evangelist (by birth) cousin-german
To our Saviour Christ, as stories do us tell :
From whose succession if that you should claim
Superiority, you should mend your cause well,
For then of some likelihood of truth it should smell,
Where none so often as Peter was reprov'd,
Nor from steadfast faith so oftentimes removed.
But grant all were true herein you do feign,
Mark one proper lesson of a Greek orator :
As a good child of his father's wealth is inheritor,
So of his father's virtues he must be possessor.
Now Peter follows Christ, and all worldly goods
forsakes ;
But the Pope leaveth Christ, and himself to glory
takes.

VOL. VI.

F

And to be short, Christ himself refused to be a king,

And the servant above the master may not be ;
Which being both true, it is a strange thing,
How the Pope can receive this pomp and dignity,
And yet profess himself Christ's servant to be.
Christ will be no king, the Pope will be more :
The Pope is Christ's master, not his servant,
therefore.

CARDINAL.

Ah, thou arrant heretic ! I will thee remember.
I am glad I know so much as I do :
I have weighed thy reasons, and have found them
so slender,
That I think them not worthy to be answered [to].¹
How say you, Master Hypocrisy ?

HYPOCRISY.

I also think so ;
But let him go forward and utter his conscience,
And we will a while longer hear him with patience.

CARDINAL.

Say on, thou heretic : of the holy Sacrament ;
Of the body and blood of Christ, what is thine
opinion ?

PHILOLOGUS.

I have not yet finished my former argument.

¹ [This word, to complete the metre, was suggested by Mr Collier.]

CARDINAL.

Say on, as I bid thee : thou art a stout minion.

PHILOLOGUS.

I shall then gladly : it is a sign of union,
The which should remain us Christians among,
That one should love another all our life long.
For as the bread is of many cornels compounded,
And the wine from the juice of many grapes do
descend,

So we, which into Christ our Rock are ingrounded,
As into one temple, should cease to contend,
Lest by our contention the Church we offend.
This was not the least cause, among many more,
Which are now omitted, that this Sacrament was
given for.

The chiefest cause why this Sacrament was
ordained,

Was the infirmity of our outward man ;
Whereas salvation to all men was proclaimed,
That with true faith apprehend the same can,
By the death of Jesus Christ, that immaculate
Lamb ;

That the same might the rather of all men be
believed,

To the word to add a Sacrament it Christ nothing
grieved.

And as we the sooner believe that thing true,
For the trial whereof more witnesses we find,
So by the means of the Sacrament many grew
Believing creatures, where before they were blind ;
For our senses some savour of our faith now do
find,

Because in the Sacrament there is this analogy,
That Christ feeds our souls, as the bread doth our
body.

CARDINAL.

Ah, thou foul heretic ! is there bread in the Sacrament ?

Where is Christ's body, then, which he did us give ?

PHILOLOGUS.

I know to the faithful receiver it is there present,
But yet the bread remaineth still, I steadfastly believe.

CARDINAL.

To hear these his errors it doth me greatly grieve :
But that we may shortly to some issue come,
In what sense said Christ, *Hoc est corpus meum* ?

PHILOLOGUS.

Even in the same sense that he said before :
Vos estis sal terræ, Vos estis lux mundi,†
Ego sum ostium, and a hundred such more,
If time would permit to allege them severally ;
But that I may the simple sort edify,
You ask me in what sense these words I verify,
Where Christ of the bread said, "This is my body."
For answer herein I ask you this question :
Were Christ's disciples into salt transformed
When he said, "Ye are the salt of the earth every
one,"

Or when the light of the world he them affirmed ?
Or himself to be a door when he confirmed ?
Or to be a vine, did his body then change ?
If not then, why now ? this to me seemeth strange.

CARDINAL.

Why, dost thou doubt of Christ his omnipotency,
But what so he willeth doth so come to pass ?

PHILOLOGUS.

God keep me and all men from such a frenzy,
As to think anything Christ's power to surpass,
When his will to his power joined was ;
But where his will wanteth, his power is
ineffectual :
As Christ can be no liar, God cannot be mortal.
Set down therefore some proof of his will
That he would be made bread, and then I recant.

CARDINAL.

This caitiff mine ears with wind he doth fill :
His words both truth and reason doth want.
Christ's word is his will ; this must thou needs grant.

PHILOLOGUS.

He spake the word likewise, when he said, " I am
the door,"
Was his body transformed into timber therefore ?

CARDINAL.

Nay, if thou beest obstinate, I will say no more.
Have him hence to prison, and keep him full sure :
I will make him set by my friendship more store.
But hearest thou, Zeal ? go first and procure
Some kind of new torment which he may not
endure.

TYRANNY.

I am here in readiness to do your commandment,
And will return hither again incontinent.

HYPOCRISY.

At thy return bring hither Sensual Suggestion,
That, if need be, he may us assist,

Lest that both I and Careful Provision
The zeal of Philologus may not fully resist ;
But he in his obstinacy doth still persist :
To put him to death would accuse us of tyranny ;
But if we could win him, he should do us much
honesty.

TYRANNY.

I hear you, and will fulfil your words speedily.

[*Exit* TYRANNY.]

HYPOCRISY.

Good Master Philologus, I pity your case,
To see you so foolish yourself to undo :
I durst yet promise to purchase you grace,
If you would, at length, your errors forego.
Therefore, I pray you, be not your own foe.

PHILOLOGUS.

Call you those errors which the gospel defends ?
I know not, then, whence true d[o]ctrine descends.

CARDINAL.

Nay, Master Hypocrisy, you spend time in vain
To reason with him : he will not be removed.

AVARICE.

Had I so much to live by, as he hath certain,
I would not lose that which I so well loved.

CARDINAL.

He stands in his reputation : he will not be
reproved ;

And that is the cause that he is so obstinate :
[To Phil.] But I shall well enough thy courage
abate.

PHILOLOGUS.

I humbly beseech you of Christian charity,
You seek not of purpose my blood for to spill ;
For if I have displeased your authority,
In reasonable causes redress it I will :
But in this respect I fear I should kill
My soul for ever, if against my conscience
I should to the Pope's laws acknowledge obedience.

HYPOCRISY.

Cease from those words, if your safety you love :
As though no man had a soul more than you.
Such nips, perchance, my lord's patience will move ;
Then would you please him, if that you wist how.
But if you will be ruled by my honesty, I vow
I will do the best herein that I can,
Because you seem to be a good gentleman.

AVARICE.

Were it not better for you to live at ease,
And spend that merrily which earst you have got,
Than by your own folly yourself to disease,
And bring you to trouble, which other men seek
not ?

HYPOCRISY.

In faith, Philologus, your zeal is too hot,
Which will not be quench'd, but with your heart-
blood ;
If I were so zealous, I would think myself wood.

CARDINAL.

Tush ! it will not be : he thinks we do but jest.
Wherefore, that some trial of my mind he may
have,
That Careful Provision should go I think best
Into the town, and there assistance crave,
His house for to enter, and his goods for me save :
Lest when his wife know that they be confiscate,
Into other men's keeping the same she doth dissipa-
pate.

HYPOCRISY.

You speak very wisely in my simple judgment :
Therefore you were best to send him away.

CARDINAL.

Go to, Careful Provision, depart incontinent,
And fulfil the words which I to you say.

AVARICE.

Of pardon herein I do your lordship pray.
You doubt not, I trust, of my willing mind,
Which herein is most ready, you always shall find :
For who is more ready by fraud to purloin
Other men's goods than I am each where ?
But lest some man at me should chance to foin,
And kill me at once, I greatly do fear.
I had rather persuade him his folly to forbear.

CARDINAL.

Prove then, if thou canst do him any good :
He shall not say that we seek his blood.

AVARICE.

Ah, Master Philologus ! you see your own case,
That both life and goods are in my lord's will :
Therefore you were best to sue for some grace,
And be content his words to fulfil.
If you neglect this, hence straightway I will,
And all your goods I will sure confiscate :
Then will you repent it, when it is too late.

PHILOLOGUS.

My case indeed I see most miserable,
As was Susanna betwixt two evils placed ;
Either to consent to sin most abominable,
Or else in the world's sight to be utterly disgraced ;
But as she her chastity at that time embraced,
So will I now spiritual whoredom resist,
And keep me a true virgin to my loving spouse
Christ.

AVARICE.

Wilt thou then neglect the provision of thy household ?
Thou art therefore worse than an infidel is.

PHILOLOGUS.

That you abuse God's word, to say I dare be bold,
And the saying of Paul you interpret amiss.

CARDINAL.

I never saw the like heretic that this is.
Away, Careful Provision, about your business.

AVARICE.

Sith there is no remedy, I am here in readiness.
[Exit AVARICE.]

PHILOLOGUS.

I beseech your lordship, even from the heart-
root,
That you would vouchsafe, for my contentation,
To approve unto me by God's holy book
Some one of the questions of our disputation :
For I will hear you with heart's delectation,
Because I would gladly to your doctrine consent,
If that I could so my conscience content.
But my conscience crieth out, and bids me take
heed
To love my Lord God above all earthly gain ;
Whereby all this while I stand in great dread,
That if I should God's statutes disdain,
In wretched state then I should remain.
Thus crieth my conscience to me continually,
Which if you can stay, I will yield to you gladly.

CARDINAL.

I can say no more than I have done already.
Thou heardest that I called thee heretic and fool :
If thou wilt not consent to me, and that speedily,
With a new master thou shalt go to school.

HYPOCRISY.

Thou hast no more wit, I see, than this stool,
Far unfit to dispute and reason with my lord :
He can subdue thee with fire and sword quite with
one word.

TYRANNY.¹

Come follow apace, Sensual Suggestion,
Or else I will leave you to come all alone.

SUGGESTION.

You go in haste, you make expedition :
Nay, if you run so fast, I will none.
This little journey will make me to groan.
I use not to trouble myself in this wise,
And now to begin I do not advise.

TYRANNY.

Have I not plied me, which am come again so soon,
And yet have finished such sundry business ?
I have caused many pretty toys to be done,
So that now I have each thing in readiness.

CARDINAL.

What, Master Zeal, you are praiseworthy, doubt-
less.
Art thou prepared this gentleman to receive ?
He will roast a fagot, or else he me deceive.

TYRANNY.

In simple manner I will him entertain,
Yet must he take it all in good part ;

¹ Tyranny had made his exit, in order to bring back with him Sensual Suggestion : here he returns, but his re-entrance is not noted. Sensual Suggestion follows him, but not immediately, and what he first says was perhaps off the stage, and out of sight of the audience ; for Hypocrisy, five speeches afterwards, informs the Cardinal that Sensual Suggestion is coming.

And though his diet be small, he may not disdain,
 Nor yet condemn the kindness of my heart :
 For though I lack instruments to put him to smart,
 Yet shall he abide in a hellish black dungeon :
 As for blocks, stocks, and irons, I warrant him
 want none.

HYPOCRISY.

Well, farewell Philologus, you hear of your lodging.
 I would yet do you good, if that I wist how.

CARDINAL.

Let him go, Hypocrisy ; stand not all day dodging :
 You have done too much for him, I make God avow.

HYPOCRISY.

Stay ; for Suggestion doth come yonder now.
 Come on, lazy lubber, you make but small haste :
 Had you stayed a while longer, your coming had
 been waste.

SUGGESTION.

You know of myself I am not very quick,
 Because that my body I do so much tender ;
 For Sensual Suggestion will quickly be sick,
 If that his own ease he should not remember.
 Thus one cause of my tarriance to you I do render :
 Another I had as I came by the way,
 Which did me the longer from your company stay.

HYPOCRISY.

What was that, Suggestion ? I pray thee to us
 utter,
 For I am with child, till that I do it hear.

SUGGESTION.

A certain gentlewoman did murmur and mutter,
And for grief of mind her hair she did tear :
She will at last kill herself, I greatly do fear.

HYPOCRISY.

What is the cause why this grief she did take ?

SUGGESTION.

Because her husband her company did forsake.
Her children also about her did stand,
Sobbing and sighing, and made lamentation,
Knocking their breasts, and wringing their hand,
Saying they are brought to utter desolation
By the means of their father's wilful protestation ;
Whose goods, they say, are already confiscate,
Because he doth the Pope's laws violate.
And indeed I saw Avarice standing at the door,
And a company of ruffians assisting him there.

PHILOLOGUS.

Alas, alas ! this pincheth my heart full sore.
Mine evils he doth declare, mine own woe I do hear,
Wherefore from tears I cannot forbear.

HYPOCRISY.

Ha, ha ! doth this touch you, Master Philologus ?
You need not have had it, being rul'd by us.

SUGGESTION.

Why, what is he thus, Master Hypocrisy,
That taketh such sorrow at the words which I
spake ?

HYPOCRISY.

One that is taken and convinced of heresy,¹
 And, I fear me much, will burn at a stake :
 Yet to reclaim him much pains would I take,
 And have done already, howbeit in vain.
 I would crave thine assistance, were it not to thy
 pain.

SUGGESTION.

I will do the best herein that I can :
 Yet go thou with me to help at a need.
 [*To Phil.*] With all my heart, God save you, good
 gentleman,
 To see your great sorrow my heart doth wellnigh
 bleed.
 But what is the cause of your trouble and dread ?
 Disdain not to me your secret to tell :
 A wise man sometime of a fool may take counsel.

PHILOLOGUS.

Mine estate, alas ! is now most lamentable,
 For I am but dead, whichever side I take :
 Neither to determine herein am I able,
 With good advice mine election to make,
 The worse to refuse, and the best for to take :
 My spirit covets the one ; but alas ! since your
 presence,
 My flesh leads my spirit therefro by violence.

¹ i.e., Convicted of heresy. This use of the verb "to convince" was not unusual at a considerably later date : thus in Beaumont and Fletcher's "*Lover's Progress*," act v. sc. 3, edit. Dyce—

"You bring no witness here that may convince you," &c.

It was also often employed as synonymous with "to overcome." See Shakespeare, ii. 377 ; vi. 49, &c., edit. Collier.

For at this time, I being in great extremity,
 Either my Lord God in heart to reject,
 Or else to be oppressed by the legate's authority,
 And in this world to be counted an abject,
 My lands, wife, and children also to neglect :
 This later part to take my spirit is in readiness,
 But my flesh doth subdue my spirit doubtless.

SUGGESTION.

Your estate, perhaps, seemeth to you dangerous,
 The rather because you have not been used
 To incur beforetime such troubles perilous,
 But to your power such evils have refused :
 Howbeit, of two evils the least must be choosed :
 Now which is the least evil, we will shortly examine,
 That which part to take yourself may determine.
 On the right hand, you say, you see God's just
 judgment,¹
 His wrath and displeasure on you for to fall,
 And instead of the joys of heaven ever permanent,
 You see for your stipend the torments infernal

PHILOLOGUS.

That is it indeed which I fear most of all ;
 For Christ said : fear not them which the body can
 annoy,
 But fear him which the body and soul can destroy.

SUGGESTION.

Well, let that lie aside awhile as it is,
 And on the other side make the like inquisition :
 If on the left side you fall, then shall you not miss
 But to bring your body to utter perdition ;
 For at man's hand, you know, there is no remission.

Beside, your children fatherless, your wife desolate,
Your goods and possessions to other men confis-
cate.

PHILOLOGUS.

Saint Paul to the Romans hath this worthy sen-
tence :

I accompt the afflictions of this world transitory,
Be they never so many, in full equivalence
Cannot countervail those heavenly glory,
Which we shall have through Christ his propi-
tiatory.

I also accompt the rebukes of our Saviour
Greater gains to me than this house full of treasure.

SUGGESTION.

You have spoken reasonably ; but yet, as they say,
One bird in the hand is worth two in the bush ;
So you, now enjoying these worldly joys, may
Esteem the other as light as a rush :
Thus may you 'scape this perilous push.

PHILOLOGUS.

Yea, but my salvation to me is most certain ;
Neither doubt I that I shall suffer this in vain.

SUGGESTION.

Is your death meritorious, then, in God's sight,
That you are so sure to attain to salvation ?

PHILOLOGUS.

I do not think so ; but my faith is full pight
In the mercies of God, by Christ's mediation ;
By whom I am sure of my preservation.

SUGGESTION.

Then to the faithful no hurt can accrue,
But what so he worketh, good end shall ensue.

PHILOLOGUS.

Our Saviour Christ did say to the tempter,
When he did persuade him from the pinnacle to
fall,
And said, he might safely that danger adventure,
Because that God's angels from hurt him save shall :
See that thy Lord God thou tempt not at all.
So I, though persuaded of my sins' free remission,
May not commit sin upon this presumption.

CARDINAL.

What, have you not yet done your foolish tattling
With that froward heretic ! I will then away :
If you will tarry to hear all his prattling,
He would surely keep you most part of the day.
It is now high dinner-time, my stomach doth say ;
And I will not lose one meal of my diet,
Though thereon did hang an hundred men's quiet.

SUGGESTION.

By your lordship's patience, one word with him
more,
And then, if he will not, I give him to Tyranny.

HYPOCRISY.

I never saw my lord so patient before,
To suffice one to speak for himself so quietly ;
But you were not best to trust to his courtesy :
It is evil waking of a dog that doth sleep.

VOL. VI.

G

While you have his friendship, you were best it to keep.

CARDINAL.

I promise thee, Philologus, by my vowed chastity,
 If thou wilt be ruled by thy friends that be here,
 Thou shalt abound in wealth and prosperity,
 And in the country chief rule thou shalt bear,
 And a hundred pounds more thou shalt have in
 the year.
 If thou wilt this courtesy refuse,
 Thou shalt die incontinent: the one of these choose.

SUGGESTION.

Well, sith it is no time for us to debate
 In formal ¹ manner what is in my mind,
 I will at once to thee straight demonstrate
 Those worldly joys which here thou shalt find.
 And for because thou art partly blind,
 In this respect look through this mirror,
 And thou shalt behold an unspeakable pleasure.
 [*Shows him a mirror.*]

PHILOLOGUS.

O peerless pleasures, O joys unspeakable,
 O worldly wealth, O palaces gorgeous,
 O fair children, O wife most amiable;
 O pleasant pastime, O pomp so glorious,
 O delicate diet, O life lascivious;
 O dolorous death which would me betray,
 And my felicity from me take away!
 I am fully resolved without further demur ²
 In these delights to take my whole solace;

¹ [Old copy, *former*.]

² [Old copy, *demeanour*.]

And what pain soever hereby I incur,
 Whether heaven or hell, whether God's wrath or
 grace,
 This glass of delight I will ever embrace.
 But one thing most chiefly doth trouble me here :
 My neighbours inconstant will compt me, I fear.

HYPOCRISY.

He that will seek each man to content
 Shall prove himself at last most unwise.
 Yourself to save harmless think it sufficient,
 And weight not the people's clamorous outcries.
 Yet their mouths to stop I can soon devise :
 Say that the reading of the works of St Self-love
 And Doctor Ambition did your errors remove.
 And hark in thine¹ ear, delay no more time :
 The sooner the better in end you will say.
 [*Aside.*] We have now caught him as bird is in
 lime.²

TYRANNY.

Come on, sirs ; have ye done ? I would fain away.

HYPOCRISY.

Go even when you will, we do you not stay.
 Philologus hath drunk such a draught of hypocrisy,
 That he minds not to die yet ; he will master this
 malady.

CARDINAL.

Come on, Master Philologus : are you grown to a
 stay ?
 I am glad to hear that you become tractable.

¹ [Old copy, *myne.*]

² [Old copy, *lime.*]

PHILOLOGUS.

If it please your lordship, I say even what you
 say,
 And confess your religion to be most allowable.
 Neither will I gainsay your customs laudable :
 My former follies I utterly renounce ;
 That myself was an heretic, I do here pronounce.

CARDINAL.

Nay, Master Philologus, go with me to my palace,
 And I shall set down the form of recantation,
 Which you shall read on Sunday next in open place.
 This done, you shall satisfy our expectation,
 And shall be set free from all molestation :
 Into the bosom of the Church we will you take,
 And some high officer therein will you make.

PHILOLOGUS.

I must first request your lordship's favour,
 That I may go home my wife for to see,
 And I will attend on you within this hour.

CARDINAL.

Nay, I may not suffer you alone to go free,
 Unless one of these your surety will be.

SUGGESTION.

I, Sensual Suggestion, for him will undertake.

CARDINAL.

Very well, take him to you : your prisoner I him
 make.

Come you, Master Hypocrisy, and bear me company,
Or else I am sure no meat I should eat ;
And go before, Zeal, to see each thing ready,
That, when we once come, we stay not for meat.

HYPOCRISY.

With small suit hereto you shall me intreat.

[*Exit* TYRANNY.]

CARDINAL.

Farewell, Philologus, and make small delay :
Perhaps of our dinners for you I will stay.

[*Excunt* CARDINAL and HYPOCRISY.]

SUGGESTION.

Had not you been a wise man, yourself to have
lost,
And brought your whole family to wretched estate !
Where now of your blessedness yourself you may
boast,
And of all the country accompt yourself fortunate.

PHILOLOGUS.

Such was the wit of my foolish pate.
But what do we stay so long in this place ?
I shall not be well, whilst I am with my Lord's
grace. [*Excunt.*]

ACT IV. SCENE 4.

SPIRIT, PHILOLOGUS, SUGGESTION.

Philologus, Philologus, Philologus, I say,
In time take heed, go not too far, look well thy
steps unto :

Let not suggestion of thy flesh thy conscience thee
betray,
Who doth conduct thee in the path that leadeth
to all woe.
Weigh well this warning given from God, before
thou further go,
And sell not everlasting joy for pleasures temporal,
From which thou soon shalt go, or they from thee
bereaved shall.

PHILOLOGUS.

Alas! what voice is this I hear, so dolefully to
sound
Into mine ears, and warneth me in time yet to
beware?
Why, have not I the pleasant path of worldly
pleasures found?
To walk therein for my delight no man shall me
debar.

SUGGESTION.

Look in this glass, Philologus: for nought else do
thou care.
What dost thou see within the same? is not the
coast all clear?

PHILOLOGUS.

Nought else but pleasure, pomp and wealth herein
to me appear.

SUGGESTION.

Give me thy hand: I will be guide, and lead thee
in the way.
What, dost thou shrink, Philologus, where I dare
go before?

SPIRIT.

Yea, shrink so still, Philologus ; in time turn back,
I say :
In Sensual Suggestion's steps see that thou tread
no more ;
And though the frailty of the flesh hath made thee
fall full sore,
And to deny with outward lips thy Lord and God
most dear,
The same to 'stablish with consent of conscience
stand in fear.
Thou art yet free, Philologus ; all torments thou
may'st 'scape,
Only the pleasures of the world thou shalt awhile
forbear.
Renounce thy crime, and sue for grace, and do not
captive
Thy conscience unto mortal sin : the yoke of Christ
do bear.
Shut up these words within thy breast, which
sound so in thine ear :
The outward man hath caused thee this enterprise
to take ;
Beware lest wickedness of spirit the same do per-
fect make.

PHILOLOGUS.

My heart doth tremble for distress ; my conscience
pricks me sore,
And bids me cease that course in time, which I
would gladly run.
The wrath of God, it doth me tell, doth stand my
face before :
Wherefore I hold it best to cease that race I have
begun.

SUGGESTION.

These are but fancies certainly ; for this way thou
shalt shun
All worldly woes : look in thy glass and tell me
what it show.
Thou wilt not credit other men before thyself, I
trow.

PHILOLOGUS.

O gladsome glass, O mirror bright, O crystal clear
as sun,
The joys cannot be uttered which herein I behold !
Wherefore I will not thee forsake, what evil soever
come.

SPIRIT.

If needs thou wilt thyself undo, say not but thou
art told.

PHILOLOGUS.

Hap what hap will, I will not lose these pleasures
manifold.
Wherefore conduct me once again : here, take me
by the hand.

SUGGESTION.

That Sensual Suggestion doth lead him, under-
stand.

ACT IV., SCENE 5.¹

CONSCIENCE, PHILOLOGUS, SUGGESTION.

Alas, alas ! thou woful wight, what fury doth thee
move
So willingly to cast thyself into consuming fire ?

¹ [3, in the old copy.]

What Circe hath bewitched thee thy worldly wealth
to love
More than the blessed state of Soul, this one thing
I desire ?
Weigh well the cause with sincere heart, thy con-
science thee require,
And sell not everlasting joys for pleasures temporal.¹
Resist Suggestion of the flesh, who seeks thee for
to spoil ;
From which thou soon shalt go, or they from thee
bereaved shall,
And take from thee, which God elect, true ever-
lasting soil.
See where confusion doth attend to catch thee in
his snare,
Whose hands, if that thou goest on still, thou shalt
no way eschew.

PHILOLOGUS.

What wight art thou, which for my health dost
take such earnest care ?

CONSCIENCE.

Thy crazed conscience, which foresee the plagues
and torments due,
Which from just Judge, whom thou denyest, shall
by and by ensue.

SUGGESTION.

Thou hast good trial of the faith which I to thee
do bear :
Commit thy safety to my charge ; there is no danger
near.

¹ [This and the next line but one have occurred before at
the close of the speech of Spirit.]

CONSCIENCE.

Such is the blindness of the flesh, that it may not
descry
Or see the perils which the soul is ready to
incur ;
And much the less our own estates we can ourselves
espy,
Because Suggestion in our hearts such fancies often
stir :
Whereby to worldly vanities we cleave as fast as
burr,
Esteeming them with heavenly joys in goodness
comparable,
Yet be they mostly very pricks to sin abhomin-
able.
For proof we need no further go than to this pre-
sent man,
Who by the blessing of the Lord of riches having
store,
When with his heart to fancy them this worldling
once began,
And had this glass of vanities espied his eyes
before,
He God forsook, whereas he ought have loved him
the more ;
And chooseth rather with his goods to be thrown
down to hell,
Than by refusing of the same with God in heaven
to dwell.

SUGGESTION.

Nay, hark; Philologus, how thy Conscience can
teach,
And would detain thee with glosings untrue :
But hearest thou, Conscience, thou mayest long
enough preach,

Ere words, from whence reason or truth none
ensue,
Shall make Philologus to bid me adieu.
What, shall there no rich man dwell in God's
kingdom?
Where, then, is Abraham, Job, and David become?

CONSCIENCE.

I speak not largely of all them which have this
worldly wealth,
For why I know that riches are the creatures of the
Lord;
Which of themselves are good each one, as Solomon
us telleth,
And are appointed to do good withal by God's own
word;
But when they let us from the Lord, then ought
they be abhorr'd:
Which caused Christ himself to say, that with much
lesser pain
Should camel pass through needle's eye, than rich
men heaven obtain.
Hereby rich men Christ did not mean each one
which wealth enjoy,
But those which fast'ned have their love upon this
worldly dust;
Wherefore another cries and saith, O death, how
great annoy
Dost thou procure unto that man, which in his
goods doth trust.
That thou dost this, Philologus, thou needs acknow-
ledge must;
Whereby each one may easily see, thou takest more
delight
In mundane joys, than thou esteemest to be
with angels bright.

PHILOLOGUS.

This toucheth the quick : I feel the wound, which
if thou canst not cure,
As maimed in limbs I must retire ; I can no further
go.

SUGGESTION.

This is the grief which Conscience takes against
thee, I am sure,
Because thou usest those delights which Conscience
may not do ;
And therefore he persuadeth thee to leave the same
also,
As did the fox which, caught in snare and scap'd
with loss of tail,
To cut off theirs, as burthenous, did all the rest
counsel.

CONSCIENCE.

Indeed I cannot use those fond and foolish
vanities,
In which the outward part of man doth take so
great delight :
No, neither would I, though to me were given that
liberty,
But rather would consume them all to nought, if
that I might ;
For if I should delight therein, it were as good a
sight,
As if a man of perfect age should ride upon a
stick,
Or play with compters in the street, which pastime
children like.
But all my joys in heaven remains, whereas I long
to be ;
And so wouldst thou, if that on Christ thy faith
full fast'ned were :

For that affection was in Paul the apostle, we may
 see,
 The first to the Philippians doth witness herein
 bear.
 His words be these : O would to God dissolved that
 I were,
 And were with Christ : another place his mind in
 those words tell ;
 We are but strangers all from God, while in this
 world we dwell.
 Now, mark how far from his request dissenting in
 thy mind,
 He wish'd for death, but more than hell thou dost
 the same detest.

SUGGESTION.

The cause why Paul did loath his life may easily
 be assign'd,
 Because the Jews in every place did seek him to
 molest :
 But those which in this world obtain security and
 rest,
 Do take delight to live therein ; yea, nature doth
 endue
 Each living creature with a fear, lest death should
 them accrue.
 Yea, the same Paul at Antioch dissembled to be
 dead,
 While they were gone who sought his life with
 stones for to destroy.
 Elias for to save his life to Horeb likewise fled,
 So did King David flee, when Saul did seek him
 to annoy :
 Yea, Christ himself, whom in our deeds to follow
 we may joy,

Did secretly convey himself from Jews so full of
 hate,
 When they thought from the top of hill him to
 precipitate.
 Wherefore it is no sin at all a man for to defend,
 And keep himself from death, so long as nature
 gives him leave.

CONSCIENCE.

The same whom you recited have conceived a further end,
 Than to themselves to live alone, as each man may
 perceive ;
 For when that Paul had run his course, he did at
 last receive
 With heart's consent the final death which was him
 put unto.
 So when Christ had performed his work, he did
 death undergo :
 And would to God, thou wouldest do that, which
 these men were content ;
 For they despised worldly pomp ; their flesh they
 did subdue ;
 And brought it under, that to spirit it mostly did
 consent :
 Whereby they, seeking God to please, did bid the
 world adieu,
 Wife, children and possessions forsaking ; for they
 knew
 That everlasting treasures were appointed them at
 last,
 The which they thirsting did from them all worldly
 pleasures cast.
 But thou, O wretch, dost life prolong, not that thou
 : : : wouldst God's name,
 : : : As duty binds us all to do, most chiefly glorify,

But rather by thy living still wilt God's renown
defame,
And more and more dishonour him: this is thy
drift, I spy.

PHILOLOGUS.

I mean to live in worldly joys; I can it not deny.

CONSCIENCE.

What are those joys, which thou dost mean, but
pleasures strange from God?
By using of the which thou shalt provoke his heavy
rod.

SUGGESTION.

Tush! knowest thou what, Philologus, be wise thy-
self unto,
And listen not to those fond words which Con-
science to thee tell.
For thy defence I will allege one worthy lesson
mo,
Unto the which I am right sure he cannot answer
well:
When David by vain trust in men of war from
God sore fell,
And was appointed of three plagues the easiest for
to choose,
He said: God's mercy easier is to get than man's, as
I suppose.
Again, he sayeth among the Psalms: it better is to
trust
In God, than that our confidence we settle should
in man.
Wherefore to this which I now say of force consent
thou must;

That when two evils, before us placed, no way avoid
 we can,
 Into the hand of God to fall by choice is lawful
 then,
 Because that God is merciful, when man no mercy
 show.
 Thus have I pleaded in this cause sufficiently, I
 trow.

CONSCIENCE.

How can you say you trust in God whenas you
 him forsake,
 And of the wicked Mammon here do make your
 feigned friend?
 No, no; these words which you recite against you
 mostly make,
 For thus he thinks in his distress: God cannot me
 defend,
 And therefore by Suggestion frail to man's help he
 hath lean'd.
 Mark who say truth, of him or me, and do him
 best believe.

PHILOLOGUS.

I like thy words, but that to lose these joys it
 would me grieve.

CONSCIENCE.

And where Suggestion telleth thee, that God in
 mercies flow,
 Yet is he just sins to correct, and true in that he
 speak;
 Wherefore he sayeth: whoso my name before men
 shall not know,
 I shall not know him, when as judge I shall sit in
 my seat.

This if you call to mind, it will your proud presumption break.
 Again he sayeth, whoso his life or goods will seek
 to save,
 Shall lose them all ; but who for Christ will lose
 them, gain shall have.

SUGGESTION.

What, did not Peter Christ deny, yet mercy did
 obtain,
 Where, if he had not, of the Jews he should have
 tasted death ?

PHILOLOGUS.

Even so shall I in tract of time with bitter tears
 complain.

SUGGESTION.

Yea, time enough, though thou deferr'st until thy
 latest breath.

CONSCIENCE.

So sayeth Suggestion unto thee ; but Conscience it
 denyeth,
 And in the end what so I say for truth thou shalt
 espy,
 And that most false which Conscience shall in
 secret heart deny.

PHILOLOGUS.

Ah, wretched man ! what shall I do ? which do so
 plainly see
 My flesh and spirit to contend, and that in no
 small thing,
 But as concerning the event of extreme misery ;
 VOL. VI. H

Which either study to avoid, or else upon me
 bring:
 And which of them I should best trust, it is a
 doubtful thing.
 My Conscience speaketh truth, methink; but yet
 because I fear
 By his advice to suffer death, I do his words for-
 bear.
 And therefore pacify thyself, and do not so
 torment
 Thyself in vain: I must seek some means for to
 eschew
 These griping griefs, which unto me I see now
 imminent;
 And therefore will no longer stay, but bid thee
 now adieu.

CONSCIENCE.

O, stay, I say, Philologus, or else thou wilt it rue!

PHILOLOGUS.

It is lost labour that thou dost: I will be at a
 point,
 And to enjoy these worldly joys I jeopard will a
 joint. [*Exit PHILOLOGUS and SUGGESTION.*]

CONSCIENCE.

O cursed creature, O frail flesh, O meat for worms,
 O dust,
 O blather puffed full of wind, O vainer than these
 all!
 What cause hast thou in thine own wit to have so
 great a trust,
 Which of thyself canst not espy the evils which
 on thee fall?

The blindness of the outward man Philologus
 show shall,
 At his return unless I can at last make him relent ;
 For why the Lord him to correct in furious wrath
 is bent. [Exit CONSCIENCIA.]

ACT V., SCENE 3.

HYPOCRISY.

Such chopping cheer as we have made, the like
 hath not been seen.
 And who so pleasant with my lord as is Philologus ?
 His recantation he hath made, and is despatched
 clean
 Of all the griefs which unto him did seem so
 dangerous :
 Which thing, you know, was brought to pass
 especially by us,
 So that Hypocrisy hath done that which Satan
 did intend,
 That men for worldly wealth should cease the
 gospel to defend.
 What shall become of foolish goose, I mean
 Philologus,
 In actual manner to your eyes shall represented be ;
 For though as now he seems to be in state most
 glorious,
 He shall not long continue so, each one of you
 shall see.
 But needs I must be packing hence : my fellows
 stay for me.
 Shake hands, before we do depart ; you shall see
 me no more ;
 And though Hypocrisy go away, of hypocrites here
 is good store. [Exit HYPOCRISY.]

ACT V., SCENE 4.

PHILOLOGUS, GISBERTUS, PAPHINITIUS.

Come on, my children dear, to me, and let us talk
awhile
Of worldly goods, which I have got, and of my
pleasant state
Which fortune hath installed me, who on me
cheerly smile,
So that unto the top of wheel she doth me elevate.
I have escaped all mishaps of which my Conscience
did prate,
And where before I ruled was, as is the common
sort,
Now as a judge within this land I bear a ruler's
port.

GISBERTUS.

Indeed, good father, we have cause to praise your
gravity,
Who did both save yourself from woe, and us
from begging state ;
Where if you had persevered still, as we did fear
greatly,
Your good from us your children should to legate
be confiscate :
Our glorious pomps, then, should we have been
glad for to abate.

PAPHINITIUS.

But now not only that you had for us, but also
have
Such offices, whereby more gains you year by year
shall save.

PHILOLOGUS.

I was at point once very near to have been quite
forlorn,
Had not Suggestion of the flesh from folly me
reclaimed,
And set this glass of worldly joys my sight and
eyes beforne,
The sight whereof did cause all things of me to be
disdained.
I thought I had felicity when it I had obtained ;
And to say truth, I do not care what to my soul
betide,
So long as this prosperity and wealth by me abide.
But let us homeward go again, some pastime there
to make :
My whole delight in sport and games of pleasure
I repose.

[Enter HORROR.]

HORROR.

Nay, stay thy journey here awhile : I do thee
prisoner take.
I shall abate thy pleasures soon—yea, too soon,
thou wilt suppose.

PHILOLOGUS.

What is thy name ? whence comest thou ? where-
fore ? to me disclose—

HORROR.

Myname is call'd Confusion and Horror of the mind,
And to correct impenitents of God I am assign'd,
And for because thou dost despise God's mercy
and his grace,

And wouldst no admonition take by them that did
thee warn,
Neither when Conscience counselled thee, thou
wouldst his words embrace,
Who would have had thee unto God obedience
true to learn ;
Nor couldst between Suggestion's craft and Con-
science' truth discern :
Behold, therefore, thou shalt of me another lesson
hear,
Which (will thou, nill thou,) with torment of
Conscience thou shalt bear.
And where thou hast extinguished the Holy Spirit
of God,
And made him weary with thy sins, which daily
thou hast done,
He will no longer in thy soul and spirit make
abode,
But with the graces, which he gave to thee, now
is he gone :
So that to Godward by Christ's death rejoicing
thou hast none.
The peace of Conscience faded is ; instead whereof
I bring
The spirit of Satan, blasphemy, confusion and
cursing.
The glass likewise of vanities, which is thine only
joy,
I will transform into the glass of deadly desperation,
By looking in the which thou shalt conceive a
great annoy.
Thus have I caught thee in thy pride, and brought
thee to damnation ;
So that thou art a pattern true of God's just indig-
nation :
Whereby each man may warned be the like sins
to eschew,

Lest the same torments they incur, which in thee
they shall view.

PHILOLOGUS.

O painful pain of deep disdain, O griping grief of
hell !
O horror huge, O soul suppress'd, and slain with
desperation !
O heap of sins, the sum whereof no man can
number well !
O death, O furious flames of hell, my just recom-
pensation !
O wretched wight, O creature curs'd, O child of
condemnation !
O angry God and merciless, most fearful to behold !
O Christ, thou art no Lamb to me, but Lion fierce
and bold !

GISBERTUS.

Alas, dear father ! what doth move and cause you
to lament ?

PHILOLOGUS.

My sins, alas ! which in this glass appear innumer-
able,
For which I shall no pardon get ; for God is fully
bent
In fury for to punish me with pains intolerable.
Neither to call to him for grace or pardon am I
able.
My sin is unto death ; I feel Christ's death doth
me no good,
Neither for my behoof did Christ shed his most
precious blood.

PAPHINITIUS.

Alas, dear father ! alas ! I say, what sudden change
is this ?

PHILOLOGUS.

I am condemned into hell these torments to sustain.

GISBERTUS.

O, say not so, my father dear ; God's mercy
mighty is.

PHILOLOGUS.

The sentence of the righteous Judge cannot be
call'd again,
Who hath already judg'd me to everlasting pain.
O that my body buried were, that it at rest might
be,
Though soul were put in Judas' place, or Cain's
extremity.

GISBERTUS.

O brother ! haste you to the town, and tell Theo-
logus,
What sudden plague and punishment my father
hath befell.

PAPHINITIUS.

I run in haste, and will request him for to come
with us.

GISBERTUS.

O father ! rest yourself in God, and all thing shall
be well.

PHILOLOGUS.

Ah, dreadful name ! which when I hear to sigh it
me compel.

God is against me, I perceive ; he is none of my God,
Unless in this, that he will beat and plague me
with his rod.

And though his mercy doth surpass the sins of all
the world,

Yet shall it not once profit me, or pardon mine
offence :

I am refused utterly, I quite from God am whurl'd.
My name within the Book of Life had never
residence ;

Christ prayed not, Christ suffered not, my sins to
recompense,

But only for the Lord's elect, of which sort I am
none.

I feel his justice towards me ; his mercy all is gone.
And to be short, within short space my final end
shall be :

Then shall my soul incur the pains of utter desolation,
And I shall be a precedent most horrible to see
To God's elect, that they may see the price of
abjuration.

GISBERTUS.

To hear my father's doleful plaints it bringeth
perturbation

Unto my soul ; but yonder comes that good Theo-
logus—

O welcome, sir ! and welcome you, good Master
Eusebius.

ACT V., SCENE 5.

THEO. PHIL. EUSE. GIS. PAPHL.

God save you, good Philologus ; how do you, by
God's grace ?

PHILOLOGUS.

You welcome are, but I, alas ! vile wretch, am here
evil found.

EUSEBIUS.

What is the chiefest cause, tell us, of this your
dolorous case ?

PHILOLOGUS.

O, would my soul were sunk in hell, so body were
in ground :
That angry God now hath his will, who sought me
to confound.

THEOLOGUS.

O, say not so, Philologus, for God is gracious,
And to forgive the penitent his mercy is plenteous.
Do you not know that all the earth with mercy
doth abound,
And though the sins of all the world upon one
man were laid,
If he one only spark of grace or mercy once had
found,
His wickedness could not him harm : wherefore
be not dismay'd.
Christ's death alone for all your sins a perfect
ransom paid :
God doth not covet sinner's death, but rather that
he may
By living still bewail his sins, and so them put
away.
Consider Peter, who three times his master did
deny ;
Yea, with an oath ; and that although Christ did
him warning give,

With whom before-time he had lived so long
familiarily,
Of whom so many benefits of love he did receive ;
Yet when once Peter his own fault did at the last
perceive,
And did bewail his former crime with salt and
bitter tears,
Christ by and by did pardon him, the gospel witness
bears.
The thief likewise and murtherer, which never had
done good,
But had in mischief spent his days, yea, during all
his life,
With latest breath when he his sins and wicked-
ness withstood,
And with iniquities of flesh his spirit was at
strife,
Thorough that one motion of his heart and power
of true belief,
He was received into grace, and all his sins de-
faced,
Christ saying, Soon in paradise with me thou shalt
be placed.
The hand of God is not abridged, but still he is of
might
To pardon them that call to him unfeignedly for
grace.
Again, it is God's property to pardon sinners
quite :
Pray therefore with thy heart to God here in this
open place,
And from the very root of heart bewail to him thy
case,
And, I assure thee, God will on thee his mercy
show
Through Jesus Christ, who is with him our
advocate, you know.

PHILOLOGUS.

I have no faith : the words you speak my heart
doth not believe.
I must confess that I for sin am justly thrown to
hell.

EUSEBIUS.

His monstrous incredulity my very heart doth
grieve.
Ah, dear Philologus ! I have known by face and
visage well
A sort of men, which have been vex'd with devils
and spirits fell,
In far worse state than you are yet, brought into
desperation,
Yet in the end have been reclaimed by godly
exhortation.
Such are the mercies of the Lord, he will throw
down to hell,
And yet call back again from thence, as holy David
writes.
What should then let you trust in God ? I pray
you to us tell,
Sith to forgive and do us good it chiefly him de-
lights ?
What, would not you that of your sins he should
you clean acquite ?
How can he once deny to you one thing you do
request,
Which hath already given to you his best-beloved
Christ ?
Lift up your heart in hope, therefore ; awhile be of
good cheer,
And make access unto his seat of grace by earnest
prayer,
And God will surely you relieve with grace, stand
not in fear.

PHILOLOGUS.

I do believe that out from God proceed these comforts fair :
So do the devils, yet of their health they alway do despair.
They are not written unto me, for I would fain attain
The mercy and the love of God, but he doth me disdain.
How would you have that man to live, which hath no mouth to eat ?
No more can I live in my soul, which have no faith at all :
And where you say that Peter did of Christ soon pardon get,
Who in the selfsame sin with me from God did greatly fall,
Why I cannot obtain the same, to you I open shall :
God had respect to him always, and did him¹ firmly love,
But I, alas ! am reprobate ; God doth my soul reprove.
Moreover, I will say with tongue, whatso you will require :
My heart, I feel, with blasphemy and cursing is replete.

THEOLOGUS.

Then pray with us, as Christ us taught, we do you all desire.

PHILOLOGUS.

To pray with lips unto your God you shall me soon entreat :

¹ [Old copy, *me.*]

My spirit to Satan is in thrall ; I can it not thence
get.

EUSEBIUS.

God shall renew your spirit again ; pray only as
you can,
And to assist you in the same we pray each Chris-
tian man.

PHILOLOGUS.

O God, which dwellest in the heavens, and art our
Father dear,
Thy holy name throughout the world be ever
sanctified,
The kingdom of thy word and Spirit upon us rule
might bear,
Thy will in earth as by thy saints in heaven be
ratified ;
Our daily bread, we thee beseech, O Lord, for us
provide ;
Our sins remit, Lord, unto us, as we each man for-
give :
Let not temptation us assail ; in all evil us relieve.
Amen.

THEOLOGUS.

The Lord be praised, who hath at length thy spirit
mollified.
These are not tokens unto us of your reprobation :
You mourn with tears, and sue for grace ; where-
fore be certified,
That God in mercy giveth ear unto your supplica-
tion.
Wherefore despair not thou at all of thy soul's
preservation,
And say not with a desperate heart, that God
against thee is :

He will no doubt, these pains once past, receive
you into bliss.

PHILOLOGUS.

No, no, my friends, you only hear and see the
outward part,
Which, though you think they have done well, it
booteth not at all.
My lips have spoke the words indeed; but yet I
feel my heart
With cursing is replenished, with rancour, spite
and gall:
Neither do I your Lord and God in heart my
Father call,
But rather seek his holy name for to blaspheme
and curse.
My state, therefore, doth not amend, but wax still
worse and worse.
I am secluded clean from grace, my heart is hardened quite;
Wherefore you do your labour lose, and spend
your breath in vain.

EUSEBIUS.

O, say not so, Philologus, but let your heart be
right
Upon the mercies of the Lord, and I you ascertain ¹
Remission of your former sins you shall at last
obtain.
God hath it said (who cannot lie): at whatsoever
time
A sinner shall from heart repent, I will remit his
crime.

¹ [Assure.]

PHILOLOGUS.

You cannot say so much to me, as herein I do know,
That by the mercies of the Lord all sins are done
away,
And unto them that have true faith abundantly it
flow ;
But whence do this true faith proceed to us, I do
you pray ?
It is the only gift of God, from him it comes
alway ;
I would, therefore, he would vouchsafe one spark of
faith to plant
Within my breast : then of his grace I know I
should not want.
But it as easily may be done, as you may with one
spoon
At once take up the water clean, which in the seas
abide ;
And at one draught then drink it up : this shall ye
do as soon,
As to my breast of true belief one sparkle shall
betide.
Tush ! you which are in prosperous state, and my
pains have not tried,
Do think it but an easy thing a sinner to repent
Him of his sins, and by true faith damnation to
prevent.
The healthful need not physic's art, and ye, which
are all hale,
Can give good counsel to the sick their sickness to
eschew ;
But here, alas ! confusion and hell doth me assail,
And that all grace from me is reft, I find it to be
true.
My heart is steel, so that no faith can from the
same ensue.

I can conceive no hope at all of pardon or of grace,
But out, alas ! Confusion is alway before my face.
And certainly, even at this¹ time, I do most plainly
see
The devils to be about me round, which make
great preparation,
And keep a stir here in this place which only is
for me :
Neither do I conceive these things by vain imagination,
But even as truly as mine eyes behold your shape
and fashion.
Wherefore, desired Death, despatch ; my body bring
to rest,
Though that my soul in furious flames of fire be
suppress'd.

THEOLOGUS.

Your mind corrupted doth present to you this false
illusion ;
But turn awhile unto the spirit of truth in your
distress,
And it shall cast out from your eyes all horror and
confusion,
And of this your affliction it will you soon redress.

EUSEBIUS.

We have good hope, Philologus, of your salvation,
doubtless.

PHILOLOGUS.

What your hope is concerning me, I utterly con-
temn :

¹ [Old copy, *his*.]

My Conscience, which for thousands stand, as guilty
me condemn.

EUSEBIUS.

When did this horror first you take ? what, think
you, is the cause ?

PHILOLOGUS.

Even shortly after I did make mine open abjuration,
For that I did prefer my goods before God's holy
laws.

Therefore in wrath he did me send this horrible
vexation,

And hath me wounded in the soul with grievous
tribulation,

That I may be a president, in whom all men may
view

Those torments which to them, that will forsake
the Lord, are due.

THEOLOGUS.

Yet let me boldly ask one thing of you without
offence :

What was your former faith in Christ, which you
before did hold ?

For it is said of holy Paul, in these same words in
sense :

It cannot be that utterly in faith he should be cold,
Whoso he be, which perfectly true faith in heart
once hold.

Wherefore rehearse in short discourse the sum of
your belief,

In those points chiefly, which for health of soul are
thought most chief.

PHILOLOGUS.

I did believe in heart that Christ was that true
sacrifice,

Which did appease the Father's wrath, and that
by him alone

We were made just and sanctified : I did believe,
likewise,

That without him heaven to attain sufficient means
were none.

But to reknowledge this again alas ! all grace was
gone :

I never loved him again with right and sincere
heart,

Neither was thankful for the same, as was each
good man's part.

But rather took the faith of Christ for liberty to sin,
And did abuse his graces great to further carnal lust.

What wickedness I did commit, I cared not a pin ;
For that¹ Christ discharged had my ransom, I
did trust :

Wherefore the Lord doth now correct the same
with torments just.

My sons, my sons, I speak to you : my counsel
ponder well,

And practise that in deeds which I in words shall
to you tell.

I speak not this, that I would ought the gospel
derogate,

Which is most true in every part, I must it needs
confess ;

But this I say, that of vain faith alone you should
not prate,

But also by your holy life you should your faith
express :

¹ [Old copy, *that that.*]

Believe me, sirs, for by good proof these things I
 do express.
 Peruse the writing of St James, and first of Peter
 too,
 Which all God's people holiness of life exhort unto.
 By sundry reasons—as for, first, because we stran-
 gers are ;
 Again, sin from the flesh proceed, but we are of
 the spirit ;
 The third, because the flesh alway against the spirit
 do war ;
 The fourth, that we may stop the mouths of such
 as would backbite ;
 The fifth, that other by our lives to God reduce
 we might :
 Again, they sing a pleasant song, which sing in
 deed and word,
 But where evil life ensue good words, there is a
 foul discord.
 But I, alas ! most wretched wight, whereas I did
 presume
 That I had got a perfect faith, did holy life disdain :
 And though I did to other preach good life, I did
 consume,
 My life in wickedness and sin, in sport and
 pleasures vain.
 No, neither did I once contend from them flesh to
 refrain.
 Behold, therefore, the judgments just of God doth
 me annoy,
 Not for amendment of my life, but me for to de-
 stroy.

EUSEBIUS.

We do not altogether like of this your exhortation.
 Whereas you warn us not to trust so much unto
 our faith,

But that good works we should prepare unto our
 preservation :
 There are two kinds of righteousness, as Paul to
 Romans saith ;
 The one dependeth of good works, the other hangs
 of faith.
 The former, which the world allows, God counts it
 least of twain,
 As by good proof it shall to you in words be
 proved plain,
 For Socrates and Cato both did purchase great
 renown,
 And Aristides, surnamed Just, this righteousness
 fulfilled,
 Wherefore he was as justest man expell'd his
 native town ;
 Yet are their souls with infidels in hell for ever
 spilled,
 Because they sought not righteousness that way
 that God them willed.
 The other righteousness comes from faith, which
 God regards alone,
 And makes us seem immaculate before his heavenly
 throne.
 Wherefore there is no cause you should send us to
 outward act,
 As to the anchor or refuge of our preservation.

THEOLOGUS.

The meaning of Philologus is not here so exact,
 As do his words make it to seem by your allegation.
 He doth not mean between good works and faith
 to make relation,
 As though works were equivalent salvation to attain,
 As is true faith ; but what he meant, I will set
 down more plain.

He did exhort the young men here by him for to
beware,
Lest, as he did, so they, abuse God's gospel pure,
And without good advice usurp of faith the gift so
rare :

Whereby they think, whatso they do, themselves
from torments free,
And by this proud presumption God's anger should
procure :

And where they boast and vaunt themselves good
faithful men to be,
Yet in their lives they do deny their faith in each
degree.

Wherefore he saith, as Peter said : see that you
do make known

Your own election by your works. Again St
James doth say,

Show me thy faith, and by my works my faith
shall thee be shown.

And whereupon his own offence he doth to them
bewray,

Whereas he did vaingloriously upon a dead faith
stay ;

Which for the inward righteousness he alway did
suspect,

And hereupon all godliness of life he did neglect.

PHILOLOGUS.

That was the meaning of my words, however I
them spake :

The truth, alas ! vile wretch, my soul and Con-
science too true feel.

THEOLOGUS.

What, do you not, Philologus, with us no comfort
take,

When all these things so godlily to you I do reveal.
Especially sith that yourself in them are seen so
well?

Some hope unto us of your health and safety yet
is left:

We do not think that all God's grace from you is
wholly reft.

PHILOLOGUS.

Alas! what comfort can betide unto a damned
wretch?

Whatso I hear, see, feel, taste, speak, is turned all
to woe.

EUSEBIUS.

Ah, dear Philologus! think not that ought can
God's grace outreach.

Consider David which did sin in lust and murder
too;

Yet was he pardoned of his sins, and so shalt thou
also.

PHILOLOGUS.

King David always was elect, but I am repro-
bate,

And therefore I can find small ease by weighing
his estate.

He also prayed unto God which I shall never do:

His prayer was that God would not his spirit take
away;

But it is gone from me long since, and shall be
given no mo.

But what became of Cain, of Cam, of Saul, I do
you pray?

Of Judas, and Barehu?—these must my Conscience
slay—

Of Julian Apostata, with other of that crew?

The same torments must I abide, which these men
did ensue.

THEOLOGUS.

Alas ! my friend, take in good part the chastise-
ment of the Lord,
Who doth correct you in this world, that in the
life to come
He might you save, for of the like the Scripture
bears record.

PHILOLOGUS.

That is not God's intent with me, though it be so
with some,
Who after body's punishment have into favour
come :
But I, alas ! in spirit and soul these grievous
torments bear :
God hath condemned my conscience to perpetual
grief and fear.
I would most gladly choose to live a thousand
thousand year.
In all the torments and the grief that damned
souls sustain ;
So that at length I might have ease, it would me
greatly cheer :
But I, alas ! shall in this life in torments still
remain,
While God's just anger upon me shall be revealed
plain,
And I example made to all of God's just indigna-
tion.
O, that my body were at rest, and soul in con-
demnation !

EUSEBIUS.

I pray you, answer me herein : where you by deep
despair
Say you are worse here in this life, than if you
were in hell ;
And for because to have death come you alway
make your prayer,
As though your soul and body both in torments
great did dwell,
If that a man should give to you a sword, I pray
you tell,
Would you destroy yourself therewith, as do the
desperate,
Which hang or kill, or into floods themselves pre-
cipitate ?

PHILOLOGUS.

Give me a sword ; then shall you know what is in
mine intent.

EUSEBIUS.

Not so, my friend ; I only ask what herein were
your will ?

PHILOLOGUS.

I cannot, neither will I tell, whereto I would be
bent.

THEOLOGUS.

These words do nothing edify, but rather fancies
fill,
Which we would gladly, if we could, endeavour
for to kill.
Wherefore I once again request, together let us
pray,

And so we will leave you to God, and send you
hence away.

PHILOLOGUS.

I cannot pray ; my spirit is dead, no faith in me
remain.

THEOLOGUS.

Do as you can ; no more than might we can ask at
your hand.

PHILOLOGUS.

My prayer¹ turned is to sin ; for God doth it
disdain.

EUSEBIUS.

It is the Falsehood of the Spirit, which do your
health withstand,
That teach you this : wherefore in time reject his
filthy band.

THEOLOGUS.

Come, kneel by me, and let us pray the Lord of
Heaven unto.

PHILOLOGUS.

With as good will as did the devil out of the deaf
man go. [Aside.
O God, which dwellest in the heavens, &c.
Tush ! sirs, you do your labours lose : see, where
Belzabub doth come,
And doth invite me to a feast : you therefore
speak in vain.
Yea, if you ask ought more of me, in answer I
will be dumb :

¹ [Old copy, *prayers*.]

I will not waste my tongue for nought ; as soon
shall one small grain
Of mustard-seed fill all the world, as I true faith
attain.

THEOLOGUS.

We will no longer stay you now, but let you hence
depart.

EUSEBIUS.

Yet will we pray continually that God would you
convert.

THEOLOGUS.

Gisbertus and Paphinitius, conduct him to his
place ;
But see he have good company : let him not be
alone.

AMBO.

We shall so do : God us assist with his most holy
grace !

GISBERTUS.

Come, father, do you not think good that we from
hence be gone ?

PHILOLOGUS.

Let go my hands at liberty : assistance I crave
none.
O, that I had a sword awhile ! I should soon eased
be.

AMBO.

Alas ! dear father, what do you ?

EUSEBIUS.

His will we may now see.

[*Exeunt* PHILOLOGUS, GISEBERTUS, PAPHINITIUS.]

THEOLOGUS.

O glorious God, how wonderful those judgments
are of thine :
Thou dost behold the secret heart ; nought doth
thy eyes beguile.
O, what occasion is us given to fear thy might
divine,
And from our hearts to hate and loathe iniquities
so vile,
Lest for the same thou in thy wrath dost grace
from us exile.
The outward man doth thee not please, nor yet the
mind alone,
But thou requirest both of us, or else regardest
none.

EUSEBIUS.

Here may the worldlings have a glass, their states
for to behold,
And learn in time for to escape the judgments of
the Lord ;
Whilst they by flattering of themselves, of faith
both dead and cold,
Do sell their souls to wickedness, of all good men
abhorr'd :
But godliness doth not depend in knowing of the
word ;
But in fulfilling of the same, as in this man we
see,
Who though he did to others preach, his life did
not agree.

THEOLOGUS.

Again, Philologus witnesseth which is the truth of
Christ,
For that consenting to the Pope he did the Lord
abjure,
Whereby he teach the wavering faith on which
side to persist :
And those which have the truth of God, that still
they may endure.
The tyrants which delight in blood he likewise
doth assure,
In whose affairs they spend their time—but let us
homeward go.

EUSEBIUS.

I am content that after meat we may resort him to.
[*Exeunt* THEOLOGUS and EUSEBIUS.]

ACT VI. SCENE LAST.

NUNTIVS.

O joyful news which I report, and bring into your
ears!
Philologus, that would have hanged himself with
cord,
Is now converted unto God with many bitter
tears :
By godly counsel he was won, all praise be to the
Lord.
His errors all he did renounce, his blasphemies he
abhor'd,
And being converted left his life, exhorting foe and
friend,

That do profess the faith of Christ, to be constant
to the end.

Full thirty weeks in woful wise afflicted he had
been,

All which long time he took no food, but forc'd
against his will

Even with a spoon to pour some broth his teeth
between :

And though they sought by force this wise to feed
him still,

He always strove with all his might the same on
ground to spill ;

So that no sustenance he receiv'd, no sleep could
he attain,

And now the Lord in mercy great hath eas'd him
of his pain.

THE RARE TRIUMPHS
OF
LOVE AND FORTUNE.

EDITION.

*The Rare Triumphes of Loue and Fortune. Plaide
before the Queenes most excellent Maiestie: wherin are
manys fine Conceites with great delight. At London
Printed by E. A. for Edward White, and are to be solde
at the little North doors of S. Paules Church at the signe
of the Gunne. 1589. 4°. Black letter.*

THE RARE TRIUMPHS
OF
LOVE AND FORTUNE.

THE FIRST ACT.

Enter MERCURY : then riseth a Fury : then enter the assembly of the gods, JUPITER with JUNO, APOLLO with MINERVA, MARS and SATURN, after VULCAN with VENUS : the Fury sets debate amongst them, and after JUPITER speaks as followeth.

JUPITER.

Ye gods and goddesses, whence springs this strife
of late ?

Who are the authors of this mutiny ?
Or whence hath sprung this civil discord here,
Which on the sudden struck us in this fear ?
If gods that reign in skies do fall at war,
No marvel, then, though mortal men do jar.
But now I see the cause : thou Fury fell,
Bred in the dungeon of the deepest hell,

VOL. VI.

K

Who causeth thee to show thyself in light?
And what thy message is, I charge thee tell up-
right?

TISIPHONE.

O Jupiter, thou dreadful king of gods, and men
the father high,
To whose command the heavens, the earth, and
lowest hell obey,
Tisiphone, the daughter of eternal night,
Bred in the bottom of the deepest pit of hell,
Brought up in blood, and cherish'd with scrawling
snakes,
Tormenting therewithal the damned souls of
them
Here upon earth, that careless live of thy com-
mandment;
I am the same—
I am the same whom both my loathsome sisters
hate,
Whom hell itself complains to keep within her
race,
Whom every fearful soul detesteth with a curse,
Whom earth and seas defy, heavens loathing to
behold;
I am the same—
I am the same sent from thy brother Pluto now,
Thy brother Pluto, king of hell and golden mines;
Sent unto thee and these thy fellow-gods I am,
From him to thee, from him by me, to tell thee to
thy face
He hath been lately rubb'd, and touch'd perhaps
too near;
Which he ne can or will put up without revenge,
If thou or any god the quarrel dare defend.
And this it is—

Thy daughter Venus, thy proud daughter Venus
here,

Blabs it abroad, and beareth all the world in hand,¹
She must be thought the only goddess in the world,
Exalting and suppressing whom she likes best,
Defacing altogether Lady Fortune's grace ;
Breaking her altars² down, dishonouring her name,
Whose government thyself, thyself dost know.

How say'st thou ? dost thou not ?—

Her father, therefore, thy brother Pluto, sends
By me, the messenger of discord and debate,
Commanding or desiring—choose thou whether of
both—

Her honour still entire³ she may maintain ;
Else on thy daughter Venus, that lascivious dame,
Himself will wreak his high despite on her.

JUPITER.

Depart, foul fiend, unto thy loathsome cell,
Where thou lamenting makes continual moan !
Go tell my brother, were it not for him,
Thou shouldst have rued thy bold presumption.
Say thou thy message hath been largely heard,
And bid him send his daughter Fortune, now,
Whilst we are here, the matter may have end.
Despatch.

TISIPHONE.

I go—

Give place, thou air ; open, thou earth ; gape, hollow
hell, below ;

And unto all that live and breathe I wish a world
of woe.

[Exit TISIPHONE.]

¹ [Makes all the world believe.]

² [Old copy, *anchora*.]

³ [Old copy, *impre*.]

JUPITER.

Ye powers divine, be reconcil'd again ;
 Depart from discord and extreme debate :
 Within your breasts let love and peace remain,
 A perfect pattern of your heavenly state,
 Whilome ago ¹ to hell condemning hate.
 Thus, when the higher powers is in one,²
 Men upon earth will fly contention.

MERCURY.

Great god and father mine, your care and fear
 Of us, and eke of all the world beside,
 That restless rolls in his continual sphere,
 Whereby all things in perfect course abide,
 As one arrays ³ another forth to slide :
 And this example may prevail for all,
 To work our wills according to your call.
 And I dare say, presuming on the rest,
 The poison of this rancour is suppress'd.

VULCAN.

How ye agree, my masters, I cannot tell ;
 [To *Venus*.] But, were we a-bed, we two could
 agree well.

JUPITER.

Gramercy, Mercury ; I know thy will
 Is ever prest to further my desire :

¹ [For *Whilome a goe*, possibly we ought to read "Whilome again," but this would not remove the whole difficulty.]

² [In harmony.]

³ [Mr Collier remarks that this word seems wrong, "but it is difficult to find a substitute ; *essays* would not answer the purpose."]

In sign whereof, to quiet all things well,
And to suppress betimes the secret fire,
That I perceive would break and mount up higher :
This to prevent, content ye here to stay,
To mark awhile what for themselves they say.
And, Venus, here I charge thee on my grace,
Not that I found thee heretofore untrue,
But for thine adversary is not yet in place,
Thou tell uprightly whence your quarrel grew ;
What words betwixt you thereof did ensue.
Say, lovely daughter ; tell us flat thy mind :
They shall be blamed on whom the fault we find.

VENUS.

O thou, that governest everything, that gods and
men attempt,
And with thy fearful thunderbolt their doings dost
prevent,
What hath thy daughter so deserved ? what doth
she, silly dame,
Before ye thus to be abused with undeserved blame ?
Surely, but that my¹ duty commands me now to
speak,
For such a trifling cause this way my wrath I would
not wreak.
But she—no marvel though she seek my seat thus
to stain,
When otherways she cannot tell advantage how to
gain.
But thence this hot despite : *Hinc illas lacrimas*,
Because, I say, she could not prove herself of power
with me.
For, all you godheads know, she pains but such as
pleasure knew :

¹ [Old copy, *thy*.]

She never grieves the groaning mind, where glad-
ness never grew.

She never overthrows but at the top of joy ;
For they that never tasted bliss mislike not their
annoy.

But I torment the mind that never felt relief ;
I plague the wretch that never thought on comfort
in his grief,

That never had the hope of any happy chance,
That never once so much as deem'd I would his
state advance.

Think, then, which of us both are of the greater
power :

Once in his life, or not at all, to grant a light'ning
hour ?

I need not stand to make rehearsal here at all,
For gods and ghosts, yea, men and beasts, unto my
power are thrall.

I dare appeal to you, if I should look awry—
Say, father, with your leave, in heaven who dares
my word deny ?

And if I please to smile, who will not laugh out-
right ?

Whereby my great omnipotence is known to every
wight.

I make the noble love the bastard in degree ;
I tame and temper all the tongues that rail and
scoff at me.

What bird, what beast, what worm, but feebleth
my delight ?

What lives or draweth breath, but ¹ I can pleasure
or despite ?

Yet divers things there be that Fortune cannot
tame ;

As are the riches of the mind, or else an honest name,

¹ [Mr Collier printed *that*.]

Or a contented heart, still free from Fortune's
power :
But such as climb, before they crawl, must drink
the sweet with sour.
Thyself, O Jupiter, didst grant sometimes to me,
Of all things here beneath the moon I should the
ruler be :
Thou say'st I did deserve the honour of that praise ;
Thyself didst once devise whereby my glory first
to raise.
Is this my sovereignty ? is this so glorious ?
Is this becoming thy renown, to quit thy daughter
thus ?

JUPITER.

Fear not, fair Venus, neither be dismay'd ;
Repose thee on the warrant of my word.
What I have promis'd, doubt not to be performed ;
The spareless destinies my will afford :
Let this defend thee, like a trusty sword.
But Lady Fortune cometh, now I see.
Welcome, fair dame ; what is thy will with me ?

[Enter FORTUNE.]

FORTUNE.

Ye sacred powers divine, how should I now begin,
Or which way should I couch my words, your
favours for to win ?
I may pour out my plaint, but thou may'st it
redress.
My father humbly prayeth you to give me leave to
speak,
And pardon him that in his wrath he did your
quietness break.
I cannot but confess, dread gods, I am not she,

That seeks with Venus to compare in her supremacy.

I am not of that power, yet am I of some might,
Which she (usurping) challengeth to keep me from
my right.

I grant she may do much with her alluring smiles,
But soon your godheads can perceive her words be
full of wiles.

What be the tragedies, the terrors, that she
makes?

Let's see the mighty monarchs, the kingdoms that
she shakes.

Poor soul, she soundly lives with wanton sug'red
joys,

Triumphing in her own delight upon her foolish
toys.

Sometimes she flattereth it in pleasure mix'd with
pain,

Like to a fair sunshine day overcast with clouds
of rain.

But should I reckon up what things I can con-
found,

What is it then, or what hath been, or shall for
aye be found?

Is not the wonder of the world a work that soon
decays?

Therefore, ye see all earthly things are wearing
out always;

As brittle as the glass, unconstant like the mind,
As fickle as the whirling wheel, as wavering as the
wind.

Lo, such I am that overthrows the highest-reared
tower,

That changeth and supplanteth¹ realms in twink-
ling of an hour,

¹ [Old copy, *supporteth*.]

And send them hasty smart whom I devise to
 spoil,
Not threat'ning or forewarning them, but at a
 smile.
Where joy doth most abound, there I do sorrow
 place,
And them I chiefly persecute that pleasure did
 embrace.
What greater grief can fall to man in all his
 life,
Than after 'sweet to taste the sour, in peace to be
 at strife ?
It is a biting thought that fretteth on the heart,
To say, the time was when I joy'd, though now
 oppress'd with smart.
If ever mighty king did 'scape untouch'd of me,
If ever year, or month, or day, or if an hour might
 be,
Wherein I have not us'd to practise some exchange,
Perhaps for this authority I might be thought to
 range
Too far beyond my right ; but even the very
 stars,
The heavens, the planets, and the seas, bear witness
 of my scars.

VENUS.

No more of that, good dame ; you run too far at
 roam :
I'll take the pains to keep you short, and call you
 nearer home.
I pray you, what's your might, when all are well
 belov'd ?

FORTUNE.

The sweetest lovers in distress the sharper storms
 have prov'd.

VENUS.

Perhaps for want of wealth; but if their riches
slack?

FORTUNE.

They are the very instrument, whereby I work
their woe.

VENUS.

What, if their friends abound, then can they
never lack?

FORTUNE.

The dearest friends are scattered, when Fortune
turns her toe.

VENUS.

If they be noble born, or of a princely blood?

FORTUNE.

When Fortune frowns, that may procure more
harm than do them good.

VENUS.

But wise men evermore upon a rock are set.

FORTUNE.

Yet can they not escape a scourge, for Fortune hath
a net.

JUPITER.

I will not in, till things be well discern'd:
Affection shall not mar a lawful cause.
By examples this may best be learn'd,

In elder ages led within your laws.
Therefore, a while hereof I mean to pause ;
And bring in, Mercury, in open view
The ghosts of them that Love and Fortune slew.

MERCURY.

Thy word my will—
Thou triple-headed Cerberus, give place ;
And I command thee, Charon, with thy ferryboat
Transport the souls of such as may report
Fortune and Love, and not in open sort.
Let them appear to us in silent show,
To manifest a truth that we must know.
[Strikes with his rod three times.

VULCAN.

Are ye mad, my masters? what a stir have we
here.
Lord, have mercy upon us! must the devil appear?
Come away, wife; when I pray thee, come away.
Down on your knees, my masters, and pray.
[Music.

Enter the show of Troilus and Cressida.

MERCURY.

Behold, how Troilus and Cressida
Cries out on Love, that framed their decay.

VULCAN.

That was like the old wife, when her ale would
not come,
Thrust a firebrand in the grout, and scratch'd her
bum.
[Music.

Enter the¹ show of Alexander.

MERCURY.

Alexander the Great, that all the world subdu'd,
Curseth fell Fortune, that did him delude.

VULCAN.

'Tis an honest, grim sire at his first coming out,
believe me;
And ye had stood in the wind, ye might have
smelt me. [Music.]

Enter the show of Queen Dido.

MERCURY.

Queen Dido, that Æneas could not move,
Stabbed herself, and yielded unto Love.

VULCAN.

The more fool she, and she were my own brother?
If my wife would not love me, must not I love
another? [Music.]

Enter the show of Pompey and Cæsar.

MERCURY.

Pompey and Cæsar, the wonders of their time,
By froward Fortune spoiled in their prime.

¹ [Old copy, *to.*]

VULCAN.

They were served well enough, why could not they
 be content
 With a roach and a red herring in the holy time
 of Lent ? [*Music.*

Enter the show of Leander and Hero.

MERCURY.

[*Hero and*] Leander presents them very loth,
 That felt the force of Love and Fortune both.

FORTUNE.

Upon him I my sovereignty did show.

VENUS.

And think you, dame, my power she did not know ?

FORTUNE.

But it was I that dashed their delight.

VENUS.

After that I had proved my open might.

VULCAN.

What a scolding is here ! shall it even thus be ?
 You look like an honest man in the parish ; I pray
 you, make them agree.

JUPITER.

Content ye both : I'll hear no more of this.
And, Mercury, surcease ; call out no more.
I have bethought me how to work their wish,
As you have often prov'd it heretofore.
Here in this land, within that princely bower,
There is a Prince beloved of his love,
On whom I mean your sovereignties to prove.
Venus, for that th[e]y love thy sweet delight,
Thou shalt endeavour to increase their joy :
And, Fortune, thou to manifest thy might,
Their pleasures and their pastimes shalt¹ destroy,
Overthwarting them with news of fresh annoy ;
And she that most can please them or despite,
I will confirm to be of greatest might.

VENUS.

Your godhead hath devis'd, as I desire,
And I am gladly therewithal content.

FORTUNE.

And I am prest to do as you require ;
Now shall you see the proof of my intent.

[JUPITER.]

Take up your places here to work your will :
When you have done, the rest I shall fulfil.

VULCAN.

They are set sunning like a crow in a gutter.
What, are they gone ?

¹ [Old copy, *thou shalt*.]

And you will be quiet, sirs, they will make you
good sport with their scolding anon.
Are not these a sort of good, mannerly gods to
get them thus away?
I must take the pains to overtake them, for I see
they will not stay. *[Exeunt omnes.]*

The end of the first Act.

THE SECOND ACT.

Enter HERMIONE and FIDELIA.

HERMIONE.

Why then, my dear, what is the greatest prize in
love?

FIDELIA.

Absence of other griefs, the greatest that loving
hearts can prove.

HERMIONE.

But absence cannot minish love, or make it less in
ought.

FIDELIA.

Yet nevertheless it leaves a doubt within the other's
thought.

HERMIONE.

And what is that?—

FIDELIA.

Lest change of air should change the absent mind.

HERMIONE.

That fault is proper but to them whom jealousy
makes blind.

FIDELIA.

O, pardon it, for that the cause from whence it
springs is such.

HERMIONE.

From whence is that ?

FIDELIA.

My mother says, from loving over-much.

HERMIONE.

Your author I will not admit ; that rests us¹ it to
prove.

FIDELIA.

Be sure it is, that jealousy proceeds of fervent love.

HERMIONE.

Can that be fervent love, wherein suspicion leads
the mind ?

FIDELIA.

Most fervent love, where so much love doth make
the fancy blind.

¹ [Old copy, *as*.]

HERMIONE.

But faithful love can never be, wherein suspect
doth dwell.

FIDELIA.

The faithful lovers do suspect, because they love so
well.

HERMIONE.

My dear Fidelity, as I think, thy love is such to
me,
So fervent, faithful and unstain'd, as purer none
can be,
Admit occasions fall out, then, that I must part
from thee,
Tell me, wilt thou mean space suspect inconstancy
in me?

FIDELIA.

If so I do, impute it to the force of lovers' laws,
That oftentimes are touch'd with fear, whereas
there is no cause. [ARMENIO *listening*.

ARMENIO.

What have I heard? what do mine eyes behold?
Dishonour to the house from whence I came!
Unshamefast girl, forgetful, all too bold:
And thou, false traitor, author of the same.
Sufferest not, for guerdon of thy due,
The king my father's gracious countenance,
But must thou climb, ungrateful and untrue,
These steps at first thine honour to advance?
Hath Fortune promised so much hope at first,
To make thy conquest of a prince's child?
And should I stand to question, how thou durst

VOL. VI.

L

To leave to think she might be so beguil'd ?
But words may not suffice to wreak this wrong,
Hid under cloak of over-hardy¹ love.
Thou² upstart fondling, and forborne too long,
To give such cause thy prince's ire to move.

FIDELIA.

Nay, my good brother, take it not so whot :
The fault is mine, and I will bear the blame.
And to return you an answer, well I wot
How to defend the honour of my name.
But for my love, I am resolved in this,
However you account of his defaults,
With vowed affection wholly to be his,
As one in whom I spy more special parts,
Than fall in fondlings of the baser kind.
To have a word not squaring with the place,
But measure men by their unstained minds,
Let fortune be to virtue no disgrace ;
For fortune, when and where it likes her majesty,
With clouds can cover birth and highest degree.

ARMENIO.

What, dame, and are you shameless in your shame ?
No, mistress, no : it will not be let past ;
But, wilful wench, this new-attempted game,
Ere it be won, will ask another cast.
And, lady, cloak his virtues as you will,
He'll be but as I said, a fondling still.

HERMIONE.

Erst had I thought, my lord, a man so wise as you,

¹ [Old copy, *handy*.]

² Here Armenio comes forward and discovers himself.

Son to a prince, scholar to him that depth of learning knew,
Among many lessons one,¹ this rule could wisely find,
To have the government of wrath and rancour of your mind.
What high offence is given unto your father's grace?
I take it nothing needful here to reason of the case :
But stand he less content, or pleased herewithal,
My lord, that thus you should mislike the cause is very small.
The unremoved love I bear my lady here,
Whose countenance my comfort is, that holds my love as dear,
Commands me to digest such hard and bitter words,
As not with credit of your state your honour here affords.
Else, prince, persuade thyself, my mind were not so base
To pocket, but for such respects, so hard and foul disgrace.
And this,² lady—Hermione, for ought that men do know,
By birth may be as nobly born as Prince Armenio.

ARMENIO.

Traitor, thou shalt not joy that proud comparison.

¹ [Old copy, none.]

² Hermione here seems to turn to Fidelia, and to tell her that possibly he may be as well born as Prince Armenio—
“And let me tell you this, lady,” &c.

FIDELIA.

My good Hermione, come hence ; let him alone.

ARMENIO.

Nay, dame ; it likes me not that you should go.

HERMIONE.

Whether thou wilt, Armenio, she shall, though
thou say no.

ARMENIO.

What, shall she, villain ?

FIDELIA.

Help, help ! alas !

*Enter PHIZANTIES [the prince], a LORD, and
PENULO [a parasite].*

PHIZANTIES.

What stir is here ? what means this broil begun ?
Give me to know th' occasion of this strife ?
How falls it out ? Armenio, my son,
Hath wound receiv'd by stroke of naked knife.
Say to me straight, what one hath done this deed ?
His blows are big that makes a prince to bleed.

FIDELIA.

My sovereign father, pardon his offence,¹

¹ Her meaning is that the king her father should pardon the offence of Hermione, whose grief of mind is more severe than the wound he has just inflicted on Armenio. The two last lines of this speech appear to belong to Hermione.

Whose grief of mind is greater than his wound.
My rightful quarrel yields me safe defence,
And here they stand that guilty must be found.

ARMENIO.

Traitor, O king, unto your majesty,
Whose proud attempt doth touch your grace so
near,
As what may be the greatest villainy
Upon recital shall be opened here.
My sister and your far unworthy child,
Forgetting love and fear of gods and thee,
And honour of her name, is thus beguil'd
To love this gentleman, whom here you see—
Hermione, whom for a jewel of some price
Old Hermet gave¹ your highness long ago.
And for I gave rebuke to her² device,
In gallant thought he would not take it so ;
But, as it seems, to do my body good—
I thank him—deign'd himself to let me blood.

PHIZANTIES.

Hermione, and hast thou done this deed ?
And couldst thou shrine such treason in thy
thought ?
Armenio, jest not with thy hurt : take heed.
And thou, fond girl, whose stained blood hath
wrought,
How hath mine age and honour been abus'd,
My princely care, Hermione, of thee ?
The fault so great it cannot be excus'd,
And you enforc'd the shame thereof to see.
But far we fear some farther ill may fall,

¹ [Old copy, *give*.]

² [Old copy, *your*.]

Through love and hate of one and of the other :
 Her foolish love, I mean ; and therewithal
 The hot disdain and stomach of her brother.
 Hermione, weigh what our pleasure is.
 Whilome, thou knowest, we entertained¹ thee
 willingly ;
 Now, seeing thou hast done so far amiss
 To reach above thy reach unorderly,
 In milder words, because we love thee well,
 Lo, we discharge thee of our princely court :
 Thou mayest no longer with Fidelia dwell,
 Forbidden to her presence to resort.
 Behold my 'ward,² that am no bitter judge,
 And wend thy way, where'er thou likest to go :
 This only way I take to end the grudge,
 And stop the love that each to other owe.
 Among such haps as might my mind content,
 Whereof the gracious gods have given me store,
 I count this one, if thus I might prevent
 The furthest outrage of the swelling sore.

HERMIONE.

Alas ! now have I lived too long, I see,
 Confounded so to yield to fortune's will :
 My sovereign prince offended thus with me,
 And I adjudg'd to death, though living still.
 Ah, my good lord ! whom I have honoured long,
 Long may your highness joy this highest place :
 Thyself the root and cause of mine own wrong.
 But must I leave to view my lady's face,
 And, banish'd from my prince's royal court,
 Wander,³ as erst the unhappy Œdipus,

¹ [Old copy, *entertaine*.]

² [*i.e.*, Award. Old copy, *Holde my reward*.]

³ [Old copy, *to wander*.]

Whose pain my foes will make their chiefest sport—
My most unhappy chance will have it thus.

ARMENIO.

No force forsooth : unpitied might he die,
That to his sovereign means such villainy.

HERMIONE.

Such villainy ! who ever meant more good ?

ARMENIO.

The venom of thy villainy withstood.

HERMIONE.

Armenio, I forbear thee here for reverence ;
Yet, by my prince's leave, in my defence
I may allege I lov'd thy sister here ;
Which love though I am like to buy full dear ;
Yet is her love more precious than the price.
But since hard hap prevents our late device,
Long live my lord, long live my lady's grace :
God send them friends as loyal in my place ;
And, trust me, then their fortune shall be such,
As not thy love shall ever prove so much.

PHIZANTIES.

Hermione, give me thy hand : adieu :
Think this is done t' avoid a further ill,
And double mischief that might else ensue.
For my sake cease to love Fidelia still :
Unequal love is enemy to rest.
She is too young to love thee as she should—
And thou, Hermione, canst conceive the rest.

My meaning is, she loves not as we would.
Time may afford to both your hearts' desires
New choice to cool these newly-kindled fires.

FIDELIA.

Never, alas ! never will be the day,
That I shall leave to love Hermione.
Sooner shall nature's course quite altered be,
Than I shall leave, dear knight, to honour thee.
Good father, let him stay, who, if he part,
'Gainst law is like to steal away my heart.

ARMENIO.

May it please your grace to keep the body here,
It's like enough the heart will hover¹ near.

HERMIONE.

My lord, laugh not oppressed souls to scorn.
Losers, they say, may easily be forborne.

PHIZANTIES.

Forbear these words ; and thou, Fidelity,
These misbecoming foolish fashions stay.
Let it suffice that thou shalt live in court,
Where, if among the jolly brave resort
Of sundry knights of noble personage,
Worthy thy love for gifts and parentage,
Thou shalt espy one² such as we do like,
Our favours shall not be too far to seek.

FIDELIA.

Ah, my Hermione !

¹ [Mr Collier printed *honor.*]

² [Old copy, *some.*]

HERMIONE.

Sweet lady mine, farewell.¹
Farewell, the courteous dame that on earth do
dwell.

ARMENIO.

Sir, now you are packing, let me know your walk,
For I have that may not be past without some
talk :
Nor stands it with mine honour to let thee bear it
clear,
But I will make thee know Armenio's blood is dear.

HERMIONE.

My lord, I make no challenge with offence ;
But first I will prepare for my defence.

ARMENIO.

So, sir, you are aforehand : keep you so,
And reckon of Armenio for thy vowed foe.
Go, wend thy ways obscurer than the night,
And Fortune for revenge plague thee with spite.
[Exit.

HERMIONE.

Farewell, my cruel foe ; not thou nor Fortune may
Add more unto the miseries that I have felt to-
day ;
Nor but by safe return ² unto this happy place,

¹ We must suppose that Fidelia makes her *exit* here, her father having gone out at the end of his last speech.

² [Old copy, *restor'de*. The alteration is suggested by Mr Collier.]

Can gods or Fortune make amends in this distressed
case.

Then cease, Hermione, to utter speech of this ;
Words not suffice this endless woe, but death,
i-wis :

And part thou from the place a dead and liveless
man,
Robb'd of thy senses and thy joy, since first this
stir began.

PENULO.

Ah, good my lord, my good lord Hermione !

HERMIONE.

I am, indeed, as thou dost say, Hermione ;
For that I am Hermione, I am
The unhappiest wight that ever hither came.

PENULO.

Ah, my good lord ! would God, poor Penulo
Might any way but mitigate this woe.
And pleaseth it your honour to command
My service, or the help of head or hand,
Penulo, my worthy lord, would prove as just,
As he whom best your honour likes to trust.
Say what it is, wherein my secrecy
May aid your lordship in this extremity !

HERMIONE.

Penulo, since thou so friendly here dost proffer
me
The uttermost of aid that lies in thee,
I do remember that which, brought to pass,
Would make me half so happy as I was.

PENULO.

Say it, my lord, and constantly I vow it,
It shall go hard, but Penulo will do it.

HERMIONE.

Gramercy, gentle friend : then, thus it is :—
The lady of my life Fidelia is ;
Of whom I am, I know, belov'd no less
Than she of me, my gracious mistress,
Sever'd by Fortune and our cruel foe,
My lord her brother, Prince Armenio.
Now could'st thou, Penulo, thyself behave
On trust to bring my lady to the cave,
Where whilome (lovers) we were wont to meet,
In secret sort each other for to greet.
She wots it well, and every corner knows,
And every uncouth ¹ step that thither goes :
For what is not sharp-sighted lovers see ?
This is the sum of my desire to thee.
Accomplish this, and, this in silence done,
My happiness will be again begun.

PENULO.

My lord, I see whereunto this talk doth tend :
I have this lesson at my finger-end.
No more ado ; betake you to your flight :
We'll make a plaister for the sore ere night.
[*Aside.*] But such an one as, if it be applied,
Shall do more grief than ease, when it is tried.

HERMIONE.

Penulo, I yield my life into thy hands.

¹ [Unknown, hidden.]

PENULO.

Ye do, sir, as now the matter stands. [Aside.

HERMIONE.

Hold, Penulo, and I will look for thee.

PENULO.

You will not look for them that come with me. [Aside.

HERMIONE.

I will be gone, and live to see my dear. [Exit.

PENULO.

Do so, sir, and perchance be never the near.
This is a step that first we use to climb :
We that, forsooth, take hold on every time.
Men of all hours, whose credit such as spites,
In heat forsooth hath call'd us parasites.
But let them spite, and we will bite as fast.
But, Penulo, thou spendest words in waste.
A fool, Hermione, that for hurting thee
On¹ slender trust will give a knave his fee. [Exit.

*Strike up FORTUNE'S triumphs with drums and
trumpets.*

FORTUNE.

Behold what Fortune, if she list, can do,
High mistress of the rolling wheel of chance,

¹ [Old copy, one.]

To overturn, and who can do thereto,
Or graciously, when please her, to advance.
Lo, lordings, this is Fortune's impery,
And in her pleasure to be changing still :
Herein consisteth Fortune's sovereignty ;
That Fortune can on earth do what she will.
When men have builded on the surest grounds,
Their strong devices Fortune's power confounds.

Enter VENUS.

VENUS.

Not all in haste ; you do not so intend :
You have begun, but I must make an end.

THE THIRD ACT.

Enter BOMELIO solus, like an HERMIT.

BOMELIO.

He that hath lost his hope, and yet desires to live,
He that is overwhelm'd with woe, and yet would
 counsel give ;
He that delights to sigh, to walk abroad alone,
To drive away the weary time with his lamenting
 moan ;
He that in his distress despaireth of relief,
Let him begin to tell his tale, to rip up all his
 grief,
And if that wretched man can more than I recite
Of fickle Fortune's froward check and her continual
 spite,
Of her inconstant change, of her discourtesy,

I will be partner with that man to live in misery.
When first my flow'ring years began to bud their
prime,
Even in the April of mine age and May-month of
my time ;
When, like the tender kid new-weaned from the
teat,
In every pleasant springing mead I took my choice
of meat ;
When simple youth devis'd to length[en] his
delight,
Even then, not dreaming I on her, she poured out
her spite :
Even then she took her key, and tuned¹ all her
strings
To sing my woe : list, lordings, now my tragedy
begins.
Behold me, wretched man, that serv'd his prince
with pain,
That in the honour of his praise esteem'd my
greatest gain :
Behold me, wretched man, that for his public weal
Refused not with thousand foes in bloody wars to
deal :
Behold me, wretched man, whose travail, pain, and
toil
Was ever prest to save my friends from force of
foreign spoil ;
And see my just reward, look on my recompense :
Behold by this for labours past what guerdon
cometh thence !
Not by my fiercest foes in doubtful fight with us,
But by my fawning friend² I was confounded thus.
One word of his despite in question call'd my
name ;

¹ [Old copy, *turned*.]² [Old copy, *friends*.]

Two words of his untrusty tongue brought me to
open shame.

Then was I banished the city, court and town ;
Then every hand that held me up began to pull me
down.

O, that the righteous gods should ever grant the
power,

That smoothest sands and greenest bogs should
soonest me devour.

Yèt that I might descry the better their device,
Here have I liv'd almost five years, disguis'd in
secret wise :

And now somewhat it is, but what I cannot tell,
Provokes me forward more than wont to leave my
darksome cell,

And in my crooked age, instead of mirth and joy,
With broken sighs in doleful tunes to sing of mine
annoy.

[*Song.*
Go walk the path of plaint, go wander, wretched,
now

In uncouth ways, blind corners fit for such a wretch
as thou.

There feed upon thy woe ; fresh ¹ thoughts shall be
thy fare,

Musing shall be thy waiting-maid, thy carver shall
be care ;

Thy dainty dish shall be of fretting melancholy,
And broken sobs with hollow sighs thy savoury
sauce shall be.

But further ere I walk, my servant I will send
Into the town to buy such things as now he can
intend.

What, Lentulo !

[*To LENTULO within.*

LENTULO.

Anon, forsooth.

¹ [*i.e.*, Constantly renewed.]

BOMELIO.

What, Lentulo, come forth.

LENTULO.

Anon, forsooth.

BOMELIO.

Why, when ? I say !

LENTULO.

Anon, forsooth.

BOMELIO.

You naughty lout ; come out, sir knave, come away.

LENTULO.

Will you not give one leave to pull down his points ?
what, an a should his breeches beray ?

[Enter LENTULO.]

BOMELIO.

Get you to the market, and buy such things as
needful are for us.

LENTULO.

Such things as needful are for us ! and what are
those, I pray ?

First, there is needful for us a pot of porridge, for
I had none this many a day ;

And then, there are needful for us a feather-bed,
for I lie on a bottle of hay ;

And then there is most needful for us a pretty proper wench for to laugh and play.

BOMELIO.

Go, buy us some victuals, and hie thee home.

[*Exit.*]

LENTULO.

Now, farewell, master mine, good gentle master momo.

Have you seen such a logger-headed fool, to say :
Go, go, good Lentulo, to buy my victuals so, and
give me money ?—no !

But for the name's sake, swounds, I were as good
serve a master of clouts.

He'll do nothing all day long but sit on his arse,
as my mother did when she made pouts :

And then a' looks a' this fashion, and thus and thus
again ; and then, what do ye ?

By my troth, I stand even thus at him, and laugh
at his simplismity.

Hath the best manners in the world to bid a man
fall to his meat,

And then I say : I thank you forsooth, master, and
I could tell what to eat.

We two, look you—that's I and he—can lie a-bed a
whole night and a day,

And we eat, and we had it : it vattens a man ;
look on my cheeks, else, are they not fall'n
away ?

Well, I must jog to the town, and I'll tell you what
shift I make there.

Marry, ye shall promise me not to steal it away.

When I come to a rich man's gate, I make a low
leg, and then I knock there ;

VOL. VI.

M

And then I begin to cry in at the keyhole, that I
may be sure they shall hear :
God save my good master and my good mistress,
a poor boy, a piece of bread and meat for God's
sake !

Enter PENULO.

Heigh ! merrily trick'd ! am I not a knave for the
nonce,
That can despatch two errands at once ?
I have both told her even as I should do,
And told my young master to meet with him too.
Now he, like a gentleman, for the valour of his
mind
Hath sworn by his honour not to stay long behind.
The desire of revenge pricketh him forward so,
That I am sure he'll not let but to go,
And that with all haste possible he may.
Then, tantara-tara, we shall have good play.
I like such a knave so can tickle them all,
To set noblemen at brabble and brawl.

LENTULO.

Save you, sir, young master, and you be a gentle-
man ?

PENULO.

Whoreson peasant, seest thou not what I am ?

LENTULO.

Troth, sir, I see you have a good doublet and a pair
of hose ;
But now-a-days there is so many goes
So like gentlemen, that such a poor fellow as I
Know not how a gentleman from a knave to spy.

PENULO.

Thou may'st perceive I am no such companion :¹
I am a gentleman, a courtier, and a merry frank
franon.²

LENTULO.

Then, thou merry companion, thou whoreson frank
franon,
Why hast thou abused the law ?
What, good skipjack, in faith with thwick-thwack
your bones I will claw.
Come about, sir knave.

PENULO.

Cot's my passion, what a merry mate have we here ?

LENTULO.

Give me your hand, sir : faith, I was bold to brush
the dust out of your gear.
Pray, sir, tell me : they say in the country 'tis a
common guise,

¹ *Companion* was often used derogatorily by our old writers. See Shakespeare's "Coriolanus," edit. Collier, vol. vi. p. 230.

² *Franion* was often used for an idle fellow (see Peele's "Old Wives' Tale," edit. Dyce, vol. i. p. 207), but here it is rather to be taken as meaning a gentleman who has nothing to do but to amuse himself. In Heywood's "Edward IV." part I., Hobbs tells the king that he is "a frank franion, a merry companion, and loves a wench well." See Shakespeare Society's edit., p. 45. The word occurs several times in Spenser ; and the following lines are from "The Contention between Liberality and Prodigality," 1602, sig. F.—

"This gallant, I tell you, with other lewd franions
Such as himself unthrifty companions,
In most cruel sort, by the highway-side,
Assaulted a countryman."

That gentlemen now-a-days cannot see with both eyes.

PENULO.

It's a lie, knave : I know¹ few gentlemen blind.

LENTULO.

No, sir ? what will you lay, and I can find
One with a wet finger,² that is stark blind ?

PENULO.

It may be so, but I think thou canst not.

LENTULO.

Will you lay ? do wager on it.

PENULO.

What should I lay ?
Thou hast no money, I am sure, to pay.

LENTULO.

No, faith, sir ; but I'll tell you what our wager
shall be ;
Because I am not able to lay any money,
I'll lay three round raps on the ribs with my cudgel
here.

PENULO.

Soft, let me look first if there be no blind man
near.
Content, i' faith : that bargain shall stand.

¹ [Old copy, *knew*.]

² [See Hazlitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 478.]

LENTULO.

Then, sir, I must be so bold as to search your purse out of hand.

PENULO.

My purse, 'sir ? wherefore ?

LENTULO.

By my troth, sir, no more but to try,
If you be not as blind a gentleman in the purse
as I.

PENULO.

I use not to carry my money in a purse.

LENTULO.

All in a pocket ? well, never a whit the worse ;
I must search your pocket.

PENULO.

What, if it be elsewhere ?

LENTULO.

Wheresoever it is, I must seek out this gear,
I'll not lose my wager, that's certain.
Very well, sir ; will you put me to pain ?

PENULO.

Have I never a weapon ?—I'll look—I pray thee,
be content.

LENTULO.

You shall have your wager, sir, as it was meant.

PENULO.

Hold thy hands, good fellow : I'll do anything for thee.

I perceive a wise man of a fool overtaken may be.

LENTULO.

Thou blind gentleman ! unless it be for my commodiosity,

I'll teach thee to be blind, and go so bravely.

PENULO.

I'll do anything for thee, if thou strike me no more,
Because I perceive thou art almost as poor
As myself am, and yet there is somewhat in thee :

I'll prefer thee to a service in the Court presently.

LENTULO.

Ha ! wilt thou do so ?

PENULO.

That I will.

LENTULO.

Wilt thou do so, indeed ?
Swear to me by thy ten commandments in thy creed.

PENULO.

I do so.

LENTULO.

Troth, then, we are friends : say nothing, I pray,
And you shall see me prove a rank runaway.
Why, when a man may be a courtier, and live at
ease,
Should a' not leave his old master to please ?
Sirrah blind gentleman, we two blind gentlemen,
and [you] do as thou promis'd here,
Perhaps I may be as good to thee as two pots of
beer.
I'll go with thee, i' faith ; gaw, let's be gone.

PENULO.

Soft ; tarry a while : I'll go with thee anon.

Enter ARMENIO.

ARMENIO.

How thinkest thou, Penulo, am I not provided
now ?

LENTULO.

I warrant, sir, a' shall have a cold pull of you,
And a' begin to make another brawl.

ARMENIO.

Farewell, when thou wilt ; I trust I shall
Meet with him : am I not almost at the tree ?

PENULO.

That same is it, sir.

LENTULO.

Sirrah, what's he ?

PENULO.

What car'st thou ? come, go thou with me.
Why, I shall have but an ill-favoured courtier of
ye.

LENTULO.

Now, for a runaway, God send us good chance.
Then, maids, at your marriage I mean me to dance.
[Exit.]

ARMENIO.

Now serves the time to wreak me of my foe—
My bastard foe—that to dishonour me
In privy corners seeks to shame me so,
That my discredit might his credit be.
And hath my father from his tender youth
Vouchsaf'd to bring thee up ? did I therefore
Believe so earnestly thy perjur'd truth,
Advancing still thine honour evermore,
That, not contented with a common wrack,
Thou shouldst intend the ruin of us all ;
And when thou seemd'st afraid to turn thy back,
To make a glory of our greater fall ?
Before thou triumph in thy treachery,
Before thou 'scape untouched for thy sin,
Let never Fates nor Fortune favour me,
But wretched let me live and die therein.
Few words shall serve, my deeds shall prove it
now
That, ere I sleep, I mean to meet with you.
[Exit.]

Enter FIDELIA.

FIDELIA.

Behold the shifts that faithful love can make ;
See what I dare adventure for thy sake.
In case extreme make virtue of a need,
But hence the grief which maketh my heart to
 bleed.

My love and life, wherever that thou be,
I am in dole constrain'd to follow thee :
Hence sprung the hell of my tormented mind,
The fear of some misfortune yet behind.
If thou escape the peril of distress,
My fear and care is twenty times more less.
No reason 'tis that I should live in joy,
When thou art wrapt in fetters of annoy ;
Nor to that end I swear to be thy wife,
To live in peace with thee and state of life ;
But as to dwell at ease in pleasure's lap,
Even so to bear some part of thy mishap,
And so to draw in equal portion still
Of both our fortunes, either good or ill.
And sith the lots of our unconstant fate
Have turn'd our former bliss to wretched state,
I am content to tread the woful dance,
That sounds the measure of our hapless chance.
I'll wait thy coming ; long thou wilt not stay :
High Jove defend and keep thee in the way !

Enter BOMELIO.

BOMELIO.

Now weary lay thee down, thy fortune to fulfil :
Go, yield thee captive to thy care, to save thy life
 or spill.

The pleasures of the field, the prospect of delight,
The blooming trees, the chirping birds, are
grievous to thy sight.

The hollow, craggy rock, the shrieking owl to see,
To hear the noise of serpent's hiss, that is thy
harmony.

For as unto the sick all pleasure is in vain,
So mirth unto the wounded mind increaseth but
his pain.

But, heavens ! what do I see ? thou nymph or lady
fair,

Or else thou goddess of the grove, what mak'st
thee to repair

To this unhaunted place, thy presence here unfit ?

FIDELIA.

Ancient father, let it not offend thee any whit,
To find me here alone. I am no goddess, I,
But a mortal maid, subject to misery.
And better that I might lament my heavy moan,
I secret came abroad to recreate myself awhile
alone.

BOMELIO.

Take comfort, daughter mine, for thou hast found
him then,
That is of others all that live the most accursed'st
man.

O, I have heard it said, our sorrows are the less,
If in our anguish we may find a partner in distress

FIDELIA.

O father ! but my grief relieved cannot be :
My hope is fled, my help in vain, my hurt my
death must be.

Yet not the common death of life that here is led,
But such a death as ever kills, and yet is never
'dead.

BOMELIO.

Fair maid, I have been well acquainted with that
fit :
Sometime injured with the like, I learn to comfort
it.
Come, rest thee here with me, with[in] this hollow
cave ;
There will I reckon up at large the horrors that I
have.

FIDELIA.

I thank you, father ; but I must needs walk another
way.

BOMELIO.

Nay, gentle damsel, be content a while with me to
stay.

FIDELIA.

The longer that I stay with you, the greater is my
grief.

BOMELIO.

The longer that you stay with me, the sooner is
relief.

FIDELIA.

I am provided other ways ; good father, let me go.

BOMELIO.

To him that off'reth thee no wrong, be not un-
courteous so.

FIDELIA.

Perhaps another time I'll come, and visit thee.

BOMELIO.

Both then and now, if so you please, you shall
right welcome be. [Enter ARMENIO.

ARMENIO.

Shall she be welcome unto thee, old wretch, indeed ?
I'll welcome both of you : come, maid, away with
speed.

FIDELIA.

O brother !

ARMENIO.

Brother ! Peace !

FIDELIA.

Good father, help me now.

BOMELIO.

Have I no weapons, wretch that I am ? Well,
youth, I'll meet with you.

ARMENIO.

Must you be gone ? is this your meeting-place ?
Come, get you home ; and pack you, sir, apace.
Were't not for reverence of thine age, I swear,
Thou should'st accurse the time I met thee here.
But, i' faith, sister, my father shall welcome you.

BOMELIO.

Go tell thine errand, if thou canst.

FIDELIA.

Hermione, adieu ;
Ten times adieu : farewell for ever now.

ARMENIO.

I thank thee, Fortune, that thou didst this deed
allow. *[Exit.*

BOMELIO.

Thou heaven and earth, and ye eternal lamps
That restless keep his course in order due ;
Thou, Phoebe bright, that scatterest the damps
Of darksome night, I make my plaints to you.
And thou, Alecto, hearken to my call ;
Let fall a serpent from thy snaky hair ;
Tisiphone, be swift to plague them all,
That make a pastime of my care and fear !
And thou, O Jove, that by thy great foresight
Rulest the earth and reign'st above the skies ;
That wreak'st the wrongs of them that master
right
Against the wretches that thy name despise.
And Rhadamanth, thou judge of hateful hell,
Where damned ghosts continual moaning make,
Send forth a fury that may further well
The just revenge that here I undertake.
Henceforth accursed be thou evermore,
Accursed all thou tak'st in hand to do,
The time, the day, accursed be the hour,
The earth, the air, and all that 'long thereto !
Dole and despair henceforth be thy delight,

Wrapped now in present and woes to come,
To wail the day and weep the weary night ;
And from this time henceforth I strike thee dumb.
Think'st thou I knew thee not ? Yes, well, i-wis,
And that thy sister, daughter to my prince.
Now brag abroad what thou hast got by this :
So live thou dumb : that be thy recompense ;
And when thy ghost forsakes thy body quite,
Vengeance I wish upon thy soul to light.

Enter HERMIONE.

HERMIONE.

Good even, good father : pardon my rudeness here.

BOMELIO.

O joy and grief ! I will dissemble yet my cheer.
[*Aside.*]

HERMIONE.

Good sir, methought I heard you speak of one
right now,
Daughter unto a prince : that made me bold to
trouble you.

BOMELIO.

I spake of such an one indeed.

HERMIONE.

Why, do you know her name ?

BOMELIO.

Fidelia. Why do you ask ? What, do you know
the same ?

HERMIONE.

Yea, father, that I do : I know, and knew her
well.
But did you wish those plagues to light on her,
I pray you tell ?

BOMELIO.

On her ! the gods forbid ; but on that wretched
wight
Her brother, that from hence right now perforce
convey'd her quite.

HERMIONE.

Alas ! what do I hear ? Good father, tell me true,
Hath she been here ?

BOMELIO.

She was.

HERMIONE.

She was !
Where is she now ?

BOMELIO.

Gone back again.

HERMIONE.

Gone back ! With whom ?

BOMELIO.

Her brother.

HERMIONE.

Her brother ! How ?

| BOMELIO.

He secret watched here ; and when she should
have stay'd
Awhile with me, he rushed out and her from hence
convey'd.

HERMIONE.

Confounded in my grief ! And can it suff' red be ?
And shall he make a brag at home of his despite
to me ?

First let me die a thousand deaths ; draw, run and
meet with him.

BOMELIO.

Tarry, my son ; it is in vain : they are now¹ at
home, I ween.
Let him alone ; he will not make great reck'ning
of his gain.

HERMIONE.

Wretch that thou art for lingering ! everlasting
shall be thy pain ;
Continual thy complaint, aye-during still thy woe,
Why mad'st thou not more haste to come, and first
of all to know ?

BOMELIO.

Content thyself, my son ; torment not so thy mind :
Assuage the sorrows of thy heart, in hope some
help to find.

HERMIONE.

Some help ! O father, no ; all help comes too late.
I am the man of all alive² the most unfortunate.

¹ [Mr Collier printed *not*.]

² [Mr Collier printed *only man alive*.]

BOMELIO.

I¹ see thy loyalty, I see thy faithful love,
Else never durst thou this attempt adventured to
 prove.
Take comfort thereby, my son.

HERMIONE.

I am the man, I say,
That Love and Fortune once advanc'd, but now
 have cast away.
The joy, the sweet delight, the rest I had before,
Fell to my lot that now the loss, my plague, might
 be the more.
O Fortune! froward dame, wilt thou be never sure?
Most constant in inconstancy I see thou wilt endure.

BOMELIO.

Accuse not Fortune, son, but blame thy love there-
 for;
For I perceive thou art in love, and then[ce] thy
 trouble is more.

HERMIONE.

Father, if this be love: to lead a life in thrall,
To think the rankest poison sweet, to feed on
 honey-gall;
To be at war and peace, to be in joy and grief,
Then farthest from the hope of help, where nearest
 is relief;

¹ [This and the next line of the dialogue are given in the
old copy to Hermione.]

To live and die, to freeze and sweat, to melt and
not to move;
If it be this to live in love, father, I am in love.

BOMELIO.

Why did you not possess your lady then at home?

HERMIONE.

At home! where is it, sir? alas! for I have none.
Brought up I know not how, and born I know not
where,
When I was in my childhood given unto my prince,
then here,
Of¹ whom I cannot tell, wherefore I little know.
But now cast out to seek my fate, unhappy where
I go.
Then dare I not be seen; here must I not abide.
Did ever more calamities unto a man betide?

BOMELIO.

My heart will burst, if I forbear amidst this misery.
Behold, thy father thou hast found, my son Her-
mione!
Thy father thou hast found, thy father—I am he.

HERMIONE.

But is it possible my father you should be?

BOMELIO.

Even from my first exile here have I liv'd forlorn,

¹ [By.]

And once I gave thee to my prince, for thou wast
noble-born ;
And now he gives me thee, and welcome home
again !

HERMIONE.

This is my recompense for all my former pain.
Dear father, glad I am to find you here alive :
By your example I may learn with froward chance
to strive.

BOMELIO.

Come, son, content thee now within a cave to dwell.
I will provide for thy redress, and all things shall
be well.
A darksome den must be thy lofty lodging now.

HERMIONE.

Father, I am well content to take such part as you.
Here is a breathing-fit¹ after hard mischance.
O gracious Venus ! once vouchsafe thy servants to
advance.

Strike up a noise of viols : VENUS' triumph.

[*Enter VENUS.*]

VENUS.

Behold what Love can work for their delight
That put affiance in her deity.
Though heaven and earth against them bend their
might,
Yet in the end theirs is the victory :

¹ [Old copy, *pit.*]

I will in them, and they triumph in me.
 Let Fortune frown, I will uphold their state,
 Yea, seem they never so unfortunate.

FORTUNE.

Brag not too much : what, think'st thou I have
 done ?
 Nay, soft, not yet : my sport is not begun.
[*Music, Music.*

THE FOURTH ACT.

Enter PENULO and LENTULO.

PENULO.

Come away with thy basket, thou loggerheaded
 jack.
 I think thy basket be cloven to thy back.

LENTULO.

My back and my basket ; look, dost thou not see,
 When my basket is on my back, then my back is
 under me ?
 And, O this basket, wott'st thou wherefore I keep it
 so close ?
 For all the love of my heart within this basket goes.

PENULO.

Thy love, with a wanion !¹ are you in love, sir,
 then, with your leave ?

¹ *With a wanion* seems to have been equivalent to "with
 a witness," or sometimes to "with a curse," but the origin

LENTULO.

What an ass art thou : couldst thou not all this
 time perceive,
 That I never sleep but when I am not awake,
 And I eat and I eat till my belly would ache ?
 And I fall away like a gammon of bacon.
 Am I not in love when I am in this tacon ?¹
 Call'st thou this the court ? would I had ne'er come
 thither
 To be caught in Cupido. I faint, I faint ! O, gather
 me, gather me ! *[Pretends to swoon.]*

PENULO.

Come up, and be hang'd. Alack, poor Lentulo !
[Aside.]
 Tell me with whom thou art in love so.

LENTULO.

You kill me, and you make me tell her name.
 No, no.
 O terrible torments, that trounce in my toe !
 Love, my masters, is a parlous matter ! how it runs
 out of my nose !
 It's now in my back, now in my belly ; O, now in
 the bottom of my hose.

PENULO.

The pestilence ! there, what is she, my boy ?
 I'll make her love thee again, be she never so coy.

of it is uncertain. It was usually put into the mouths of persons in the lower orders, and it is used by one of the fishermen in act ii. sc. 1 of Shakespeare's "Pericles," edit. Collier, vol. viii. p. 292.

¹ [Taking.]

LENTULO.

Wilt thou see? O gods of love! that word plucks
 up my heart,
 I'll tell thee, airrah—even as we two at the court-
 gate did wait,
 Did'st thou not mark a goodly lady, O lady,
 lady!¹
 Why should not I as well as he, my dear lady?
 Did'st thou not see her come in with a golden
 lock?
 She had a fine gown on her back, and a passing
 nether-stock.

PENULO.

Well, sir, proceed: I remember her very well.
 It's the Duke's daughter the sot means, I can tell.
[*Aside.*]

LENTULO.

Now, airrah, there was a little dappard² ass with
 her, that went before:
 When I saw him, I came in sneaking more and
 more.
 To have heard them talk; ah! crouching on is
 good;
 For when he had talk[d] awhile, I had come in
 with, ay forsooth; no forsooth, that I would,
 And she would have look'd upon me: then more
 'quaintance we should have.

¹ [This appears to be imitated from some old ballad of the time. See "Ancient Ballads and Broadside," 1867, p. 43-6, and the Editor's note at p. 410.]

² [Dapper.]

PENULO.

An excellent device. Ah, sirrah! you are an excellent knave.

LENTULO.

Tu autem, tu¹ autem : I have it in me. But, sirrah, wott'st thou what now?

As God juggle me, when I came near them, I tell thee true,

The same squall² did nothing but thus : I know what's what ;

And I ran before him, and did thus too.

[*Strikes* PENULO.]

PENULO.

A pox upon you, what meant you by that?

LENTULO.

What mean I? marry, sir, he meant to give her a box on the ear, if she spake to me,

And I meant to give him another box on the ear, sir, he should see.

PENULO.

You should have bestow'd it where you meant it, then.

Must you strike me, and mean other men?

¹ [Old copy, *turn*.]

² Middleton uses *squall* for a wench in his "Michaelmas Term" and in "The Honest Whore," edit. Dyce, i. 431, and iii. 55. Here it evidently means a person of the male sex. [When used of men, a little insignificant fellow, a whippersnapper. Presently we see that Lentulo was referring to the Duke's son.]

LENTULO.

'Twas nothing, fellow, but for 'sample's sake.

PENULO.

Well, sir, I am content this once it to take.
But, sirrah, you must know that squall is the duke's
son,
That now by mischance is stroken stark dumb,
In fetching home his sister, that ran away from
hence.

LENTULO.

Is she then a runaway? O passing wench!
I thought as much; now, good Lord, to see
That she and I now akin should be.
O cuckally¹ luck! O heavy chance, O!
I runaway, she runaway: go together, go!

PENULO.

But all the court laments, and sore weeps for it.

LENTULO.

All the court? thou liest: the Court-gate weeps
not a whit.

Enter BOMELIO, like a counterfeit Physician.

BOMELIO.

Bien² venu, chi diue ve mi nou intendite seigneur, no.

¹ [Cuckoldy. A loose form of expression.]

² [Bomelio, in his disguise, is made to talk bad French and Italian, as well as English; this had been done in the case of Dr Caius who, however, only spoke broken English. The nationality of Bomelio is therefore doubtful; but these *minutiae* did not trouble the dramatists of those days much.]

I have a piece of work in hand now, that all the world must not know.

LENTULO.

Cock's nowns, the devil ! a-God's name, what's he ?

PENULO.

Some Spaniard or foreign stranger he seems to be.

BOMELIO.

Dio vou salvi, signore, e voutre gratio pавero mouchato.

LENTULO.

I have no pleasure in thee : I pray thee, get thee gone.

PENULO.

What would you, sir ?

BOMELIO.

Monsieur, par ma foy, am one have the grand knowledge in the skience of fiskick.

Can make dem hole have been all life sick ;
Can make to seco see, and te dumb speak ;
Can make te lame go, and be ne'er so weak.

PENULO.

Can you so, sir ? what countryman are you, I pray ?

BOMELIO.

E be Italian, Neapolitan : e come a Venice¹ a toder day.

LENTULO.

And you can speak any pedlar's French,² tell me what I say.

BOMELIO.

Ne point entende, signior.

LENTULO.

You are an ass. I can spose him, I.

BOMELIO.

Monsieur, parle petit : e heard now hereby,
Dere be a nobel man dumb, dat made me stay :
If me no help him, me carry no head away.

PENULO.

Will you venture your head to help him, indeed ?
Well, sir, I'll tell the Duke with all possible speed.
Tarry me³ here : I'll return by and by.
Excellent luck ! it falls out happily. *[Exit.]*

¹ [Old copy, *Vedice*—an unlikely blunder.]

² Pedlar's French, often mentioned in our old writers, was the cant language of thieves and vagabonds.

"When every peasant, each plebeian,
Sits in the throne of undeserv'd repute :
When every pedlar's French is term'd *Monsieur*."

—"Histriomastix," 1610, sig. E 2.

³ [*i.e.*, Tarry for me. So in the title of Wapull's play,
"The Tide tarrieth no Man."]

LENTULO.

Will you venture your head, sirrah, blockhead you ?

BOMELIO.

You be de ass-head, me can tell dat's true.

LENTULO.

Swounds ! O, but that I am in love, thou shouldst
know

What 'twere to move my vengeance so !

BOMELIO.

Come heter, sirrah ; me speak with you : me can
tell

You are de runaway from your ma'ter ; ah, very
well.

LENTULO.

You gods and devils eke, what do you mean to
do ?

Shall I be known a runaway, for and to shame me
too ?

I a runaway, sirrah ? go with your uplandish, go :
I am no runaway, I would you should know.

BOMELIO.

You no runaway from your ma'ter in de wood,
When he send you to market ? Ah, no point good !

LENTULO.

O furies fell, and hags of hell, with all that therein
be !

What, do ye mean to shame me clean, and tell him
then of me?
Hear you, sirrah: you are no devil; mass, and I
wist you were,
I would lamback¹ the devil out of you, for all your
gear.

BOMELIO.

Diavolo! ah, fie! me no diavolo, me very fury.
Let-a me see your basket: what meat you buy?

LENTULO.

Look in my basket! O villain, rascal, tarry, stay!
Hath opened it? out alas! my love is quite flown
away.
My love is gone, my love is gone out of the basket
there,
Prepare therefore to kill thyself: farewell, my
friends so dear.

BOMELIO.

Ah, vat-a you do, man?

LENTULO.

Uplandish, hence away.

BOMELIO.

Vat-a you do, man? no point yourself to slay.
Come de be hang-a.²

¹ [Beat. See Nares, 1859, in v. Lambeake. Mr Collier refers us to the "Supplement to Dodsley's Old Plays," 1833, p. 80, Gabriel Harvey's "Pierces' Supererogation," 1593, and to "Vox Graculi," 1623.]

² [Come to be hanged.]

LENTULO,

Alas ! O my neck, alas !
O frying-pan of my head ! uplandish, now, cham
worse than ever was.
Adieu ! farewell, farewell, my love.

BOMELIO.

Your love ? if you be in love, den do as I bid do,
And you shall 've¹ your love away wit' you, too.

LENTULO.

Uplandish, O my friend ! if thou do so for me,
Hold here my hand : thy fellow, friend, and partner
will I be.

BOMELIO.

Go you ten, and get-a me some fine, fine, fine
colosse,
And wit' te marigol' leaf all-to mus your nose.

LENTULO.

Ah, my nose, my nose ! O God, is my nose in my
hand ?
Uplandish, leave your signs ; without them I can
understand.

BOMELIO.

And come a me heter wit' a gold ring in your
mouth fast :
E make de lady go wit' you weter list at last.

¹ [Old copy, *slave*.]

LENTULO.

O, let me 'brace thy cursed corpse ! O, now I live
again !
I will go get apparel straight, although be to my
pain.
'Tis th' apparel, a marigol', and a ring.

BOMELIO.

Noting else, and you tem bring.

LENTULO.

Bring them ? yes, I warrant thee, I'll bring them
by and by.
Now, goodman Venus, lend thy hand, and lady
Vulcan high. [Exit.

BOMELIO.

A good beginning. I am not descri'd :
They know not me, but I know them too well.
Disguised thus their counsels may be tri'd,
And I may safe return unto my cell ;
Where I have left my solitary son,
'Twixt hope and fear, in doubt and danger too,
Till I return to tell him what is done,
Which for his sake I have devis'd to do.
Eternal gods, that know my true intent,
And how unjustly wronged I have been,
Vouchsafe all secret dangers to prevent,
And further me, as yet you do begin.
Sufficeth you my travail heretofore,
My hunger, cold, and all my former pain.
Here make an end, and plague me now no more :
Contented, then, at rest I will remain.
But hark ! some comes : dissemble, then, again.

Enter the DUKE, his Son, and PENULO.

PENULO.

My lord, yon is the man whom I have told to you.¹

DUKE.

My friend, I am inform'd that by thy worthy skill
In physic, thou art able to recover at thy will
The strangest cures that be : if this be true indeed,
As grant the gods it may, I pray thee then with speed
Provide for our relief : recover this my son,
Unto his speech, whom here thou seest before us
to be dumb.

BOMELIO.

You no take care for dat, me nobel prince ;
Me make him speak again, or me ne'er come hence.

DUKE.

Thrice welcome, then, to us : despatch it out of hand,
And thou shalt bless the time that e'er thou cam'st
unto our land.

BOMELIO.

Let-a me see him. You hear me ?
Ah, dat vel : turn heter ; no like it truly.

PENULO.

By the mass, this physic is an excellent art ;
It picks such a deal of gold out of every part.
[*Aside.*]

¹ [The following scene reminds us of the ancient story of the "Physician of Brai."]

BOMELIO.

Vell, vell ; me now see vat this matter mean.
Nobel prince, dis ting be done by mashic clean.
'Tis true dat me tell, me perceive it plain :
No natural 'pediment, but cunshering certain.

DUKE.

O double, treble woe ! my son, how cometh this ?
He saith by magic it is wrought, unnatural it is.
Dost thou remember aught, that so it should appear,
Or can'st thou any reason make it should be true
we hear ?
What means he by these signs ? can any one
express ?

PENULO.

If you give me leave, sir, to say as I guess,
Methinks he should mean there was some old man,
That threatened to be revenged on him then.
'Tis so you may see : he confirms it again.

DUKE.

Condemned be that man to everlasting pain,
Perpetual his annoy, continual his unrest !
O, that I had him here to plague as I thought best !
But, learned sir, is there no way, is there no
remedy ?
Can there be found out no device the charm to
mollify ?
Good sir, if anything, whatever that it be,
Let spare no cost, my will is such, I will allow it
thee.

BOMELIO.

Indeed, and by my trot', dar is o' thing,

But me am vera lot' de same to bring ;
Yit wit'out dat me am seawer,¹ me tell,
Your son again be never more well.

DUKE.

Good father, tell it me : whatever should befall,
Mine be the danger, mine the loss, you shall be
pleased for all.
In any case, express it then.

BOMELIO.

Fait', then me will.
If you no have your son be so dumb still.
You mus' get-a de grand enemy dat he now have,
And in de tenderest part his dearest blood crave :
Derwit' mus' you wash his tongue-a string.
Noting but dat will his speech bring.

DUKE.

The dearest blood in the tenderest part
Of his great enemy ? O, grief to my heart !
Will nothing else cure his disease ?

BOMELIO.

Noting, by my trot' ; but do as you please.

DUKE.

My son, my wretched son ! and whom dost thou
suppose
Thy greatest enemy amongst thy father's foes ?
It is Hermione : 'tis he, and none but he.

¹ [Sure.]

He hath now proved himself, indeed, thy greatest enemy.

Where lives the wretch? That he were ta'en, and we revenged be?

PENULO.

And must his dearest blood, in his tenderest part,
Help him in his speech? that's an excellent art.
But what part is that, my masters, now about a
man

That is the tenderest? guess it, and you can.
I can tell what part a woman thinks tenderest to
be,

And there is dear blood in it—but *benedicite*.

And do you think, sir, there is none but he,

That can be thought his greatest enemy?

I have heard it said, there is no hate

Like to a brother or sister's, if they fall at de-
bate.

I will not say, but you may think it as well as I,
If you mark since her coming home his sister's
cruelty,

And the continual rancour she beareth unto him.

BOMELIO.

Is te maid his sister? be Got, den, he say tim.
Bin mine fait' and trot', ser, 'tis true dat he say:
His sister be his greatest enemy to-day.

DUKE.

And must I kill my daughter to help my son to
speech?

I'll never do it.

PENULO.

See how a doth beseech !—
I would all our daggers were of his quality,
They should not brawl with a man, then, so for
his money.

BOMELIO.

You kill your daughter ! fie, no point so.
Her dearest blood in tenderest part me will show :
'Tis in her paps, her dugs, for der be de tenderest
part,
And de blood de dearest ; it comes from de heart.
So she be prick'd a little under de breast,
And wash his tongue-a, he speak wit' de best.

DUKE.

This thing is somewhat easier, if she consent
thereto ;
If not, I can enforce and make her it to do.
Penulo, despatch, and to my marshal bear
This signet for a token that he send her to us here.

PENULO.

I will, my lord.

[*Exit.*]

DUKE.

He that hath felt the zeal, the tender love and care :
The fear, the grief that parents dear unto their
children bear,
He may, and only he, conceive mine inward woe,
Distracted thus 'twixt two extremes that hale me
to and fro.
Sometime mistrusting that, and then misliking
this—

Have parents such a cause of joy, or is it such a
 bliss
 To see the offspring of their seed in health before
 them now ?
 O, little know they what mishap awaits the death
 for you.
 But, son, my dearest son, recomfort thou thy mind ;
 Fight against fortune and thy fates, when they be
 most unkind.
 And since I understand what may recover thee,
 Make sure account of it, myself will do it presently.
 But, sir, I pray you, lest my daughter should by
 fear
 Or fright ¹ of it be sore abash'd, be always ready
 here
 To stench her wound, when you see good.

BOMELIO.

Awe, awe, she lose but little blood :
 Two or tree ounces sha' be de very most.
 Yonder she come, is no she ?

DUKE.

The same is she.

Enter FIDELIA with PENULO.

FIDELIA.

Father, they say you sent for me.

DUKE.

Yea, daughter, I did so ;

¹ [Old copy, *sight*. Mr Collier suggested *sight*.]

And mark what I shall say to thee, the cause
thereof to show.
Thou seest thy brother here ?

FIDELIA.

In name, but not in kind.

DUKE.

Well, hold thy peace, I say, and let me tell my
mind.
Thy brother here, I say, thou seest him stricken
dumb,
And, as this learned man declares by magic it is
done.
But yet there is a way—one thing—he telleth
me,
That will restore him to his speech that resteth
inwardly ;
Which, though I might command, yet I intreat to
know,
Be not so stubborn or unkind thy furtherance to
show.

FIDELIA.

Noble father, you cannot say, but hitherto I have
Been most obedient to your will in all things that
you crave ;
But herein pardon me, if this I do deny :
I never can be made to grant help to mine enemy,
My deadly enemy, worse than my mortal foe,
And such an one is he to me, for I have found him
so ;
That laboured evermore to cross me with despite,
But I am glad I may so well his courtesy requite.

PENULO.

A right woman—either love like an angel,
Or hate like a devil—in extremes so to dwell.
[*Aside.*]

DUKE

But, daughter, I command, and I thy father, too.

FIDELIA.

And I, your daughter, anything that lawful is to
do.

DUKE

Is it not right and lawful both to help thy brother's
woe?

FIDELIA.

It's neither right nor lawful, sir, to help my deadly
foe.

DUKE

If he have been thy foe, he may become thy friend.

FIDELIA.

And when I see that come to pass, I may some
succour send.

DUKE

But wherefore shouldst thou be so cruel unto him?

FIDELIA.

Because unto my dearest friend so spiteful he hath
been.

DUKE.

Nay, stubborn girl, but then I will constrain thee,
 I.
 Lay hold on her : myself will then, sith she doth
 it deny.

FIDELIA.

Assist me, righteous gods, in this extremity.

BOMELIO.

[*To DUKE, aside.*] Ah, pardon-a, pardon-a : please
 you, let me a while wit' her alone,
 And me warrant me make her consent to you
 anon ;
 Else me give her a powder with a little drink,
 Whish make her sleep ; and den, when she noting
 tink,
 Wit' de sharp rasher, me prick her by and by,
 And stop it again, and she no feel why.
 Please you begone, and let us two alone here.
 Me make her consent, you no point fear.

DUKE.

Do it, Master Doctor, and I am bound to you for
 aye.
 Ungracious girl, that dost deny the father to
 obey.
 Look to her, sir, and send me word when thou hast
 done the deed. [*Excunt.*]

BOMELIO.

Awe, awe ; i' fait', i' fait', me make her bleed.

FIDELIA.

O wretched girl ! what hope remains behind ?
 What comfort can recomfort now thy mind ?
 Forsaken thus of father and of friend,
 Why seek'st thou not to bring thy life to end ?
 Can greater woes befall unto thy share ?
 Come, gentleman, despatch, and do not spare :
 If it be so his pleasure and thy will,
 I am content my dearest blood to spill.
 Defer not then : hold, take thine aim at me,
 And strike me through ; for I desire to die.

BOMELIO.

The heavens forbid, fair maiden ; no, not I :
 I am thy friend, I am no enemy.
 Fear not, stand up : it is only for thy sake
 That I this toil and travail undertake.
 Thy love, my son, is at my cave with me,
 Safe and in health, long looking there for thee.
 Trust to my words, fair maid, for I am he,
 That overtook thee in the wood last day ;
 And till thy coming, Hermione, I say,
 Is in my cave——

FIDELIA.

What joyful words be these !
 And is Hermione your son ? do, then, as you shall
 please.
 Behold me ready, prest to follow any way :
 Good father, do not thus delude a simple maid, I
 pray.
 I trust unto your words : my life is in your
 power,
 And till I see Hermione, each minute is an hour.

BOMELIO.

Daughter, dismay no whit ; but trust to me ;
What I have said performed thou shalt see.
I have dissembled with thy father here,
The better that I might with thee confer.
And since thou art so faithful to thy love,
As I may well report I did thee prove,
Let us be gone now closely as we may.

FIDELIA.

Yea, my good father, even when you will, I pray.
Thrice-blessed be the hour I met with you !
My father now and brother both adieu :
Unkind to her, most kind that you should be,
I leave them all, my dear, to come to thee.

[*Exeunt.*]

Enter HERMIONE, with books under his arm.

HERMIONE.

O gods ! that deepest griefs are felt in closest
smart ;
That in the smiling countenance may lurk the
wounded heart,
I see the noble mind can counterfeit a bliss,
When overwhelmed with a care his soul perplexed
is.
It is for dastard knights, that stretch on feather
beds,
Despairing in adversity so low to hang their
heads.
The better born, the more his magnanimity :
The fiercer fight, the deeper wound, the more un-
daunted he.

So I perceive it now ; I well perceive it here :
What I myself could not, I learn by thee, my father
dear.

He that in golden age, I mean his lusty youth,
Was thought to spend in pleasure's lap without re-
gard of ruth ;

He that had lost his time as bravely as the best,
Only devising how to make his joys surmount the
rest :

Not in that wanton youth, not in that pleasant
mate,
Could Fortune with her fickleness his wonted mind
abate.

He rather challengeth to do her very worst,
And makes a semblance of delight, although indeed
accurs'd.

My father thereupon devised how he might
Revenge and wreak himself on her, that wrought
him such despite :

And therefore, I perceive, he strangely useth it,
Enchanting and transforming that his fancy did
not fit.

As I may see by these his vile blasphemous books ;
My soul abhors as often as mine eye upon them
looks.

What gain can countervail the danger that they
bring,

For man to sell his soul to sin, is't not a grievous
thing ?

To captivate his mind, and all the gifts therein,
To that which is of others all the most ungracious
sin ;

Which so entangleth them that thereunto apply,
As at the last forsaketh them in their extremity.
Such is this art, such is the study of this skill,
This supernatural device, this magic, such it will.
In ransacking his cave these books I lighted on,

And with his leave I'll be so bold, while he abroad
is gone,
To burn them all ; for best that serveth for this
stuff.
I doubt not but at his return to please him well
enough.
And, gentlemen, I pray, and so desire I shall,
You would abhor this study, for it will confound
you all. [Exit.

*Enter LENTULO with a ring in his mouth, a mari-
gold in his hand, a fair suit of apparel on his
back ; after he hath a while made dumb-show,
PENULO cometh, running in with two or three
other.*

PENULO.

Run, for the love of God ! search, villains, out of
hand :
Run, I say, rascals : look about ye ; how, do you
stand ?
The Duke's daughter is gone again, and all the
court is in an uproar.
A pox on such a physician ; he shall counsel her
no more.

SERJEANT.

See you, Master Penulo, who is that yonder so
brave ?

PENULO.

Cock's blood, you villain ! what do you here, you
slave ?
Swounds ! hath robb'd the Duke of a suit of apparel,
Why speak you not, sirrah ? yea, will you not
tell ?
Lay him on, my masters : spare him not, I say.

Speak you by signs? One of you pull the ring
away.

SERJEANT.

Cock's blood, my finger! a bites as pestilence¹
there.

LENTULO.

What mean you, my masters; what mean ye
here?

PENULO.

Have you found your tongue, sir! O, very well.
I pray you, sir, where had you this suit of apparel?

LENTULO.

This 'parel? what, and I stole it: what's that to
thee?

PENULO.

Marry, sir, no more but that hang'd you shall be.

LENTULO.

Then, all the world shall see there is somewhat in
me.

When I am hang'd, O, I shall swing lustily.
Mass, I shall do him great credit that hangs me.
But if I may be hanged by an attorney,
I will desire thee the place to supply.

PENULO.

Yes, marry will I, for courtesy sake.
Come on your way, sir: the pains I will take

¹ [He bites like the pestilence.]

To bring you before the Duke, that he may see,
What a proper man in his apparel you be.

LENTULO.

Wilt thou, faith ? mass, I thank thee heartily ;
But I must talk a little with our uplandish here,
And then I'll go with thee, faith, anywhere.

PENULO.

Uplandish, you rascal ! where is he now ?
He's gone, and stole away the Duke's daughter
with him too.

LENTULO.

O my heart ! what do you say ?

PENULO.

Marry, that together they be both run away.

LENTULO.

Nay, then, have after ye ; behind I'll not stay.

PENULO.

What ! no such haste with you, sir, I pray.

LENTULO.

And is my lady gone and fled ? O, take me up, for
I am dead.
Farewell, my marigold ; O villain, caitiff, he !
By bones and stones, and all the moons, I will
avenged be.

PENULO.

You shall be revenged, sir, that shall you presently.
Away, away with him to the Duke by and by.

LENTULO.

I can go by myself, and you will let me alone.
Now as I walk, alas ! I make to me my moan.
When I in prison strong, poor soul, shall live and
die,
Then will I make my loving song upon mine own
pigsny.

PENULO.

Away with him, sirs : why do ye tarry ?

LENTULO.

And thou wert in my case, thou wouldst not be so
hasty. [*Exit in custody of SERJEANT.*]

PENULO.

Fie upon it ! what a stir have we here ?
Never was nobleman's house in such fear.
Such hurrying and stirring, such running every
way ;
Such howling, such crying, such accursing the day.
That ever the villain could counterfeit so,
[And] when we least thought of it, away with her
to go.
But the world is so full of knavery now,
That we know not whom to trust, I may say to
you.
If my wife fall sick, as she may, I'll make a con-
dition,

She shall never take counsel of an uplandish physician.

Hang them, knaves. But what a prating keep I,
When I should have been seven miles of mine
errand ; for why

I must go set all the country up in a watch,
If it be possible, this physician to catch.

[*Exit* PENULO.¹

Enter BOMELIO and FIDELIA.

Stay, daughter, stay : forbear thy posting haste.
Thou need'st not fear ; all perils now are past.
Thanks to the gods that such success they gave,
Thus happily to bring us to my cave.

FIDELIA.

O father ! still I fear mishap behind :
Suspect is natural unto our kind,
And perils that import a man's decay
Can never be eschewed too soon, they say.
Had I [but] sight of mine Hermione,
I care not then what did become of me.

BOMELIO.

I will herein accomplish thy desire,
So grant the gods the rest that I require.
Hermione ! Hermione ! my son, I say,
Come forth and see thy friends that for thee stay.

¹ Penulo makes his *exit* (though not marked in the old copy), and the stage then represents some place near the cave of Bomelio, who enters with Fidelity.

Enter HERMIONE.

HERMIONE.

Welcome, my father ; but ten times welcome thou,
The constant lady mine, that liveth now.

FIDELIA.

And lives Hermione ? lives my Hermione ?
What can be added more to my felicity ?

HERMIONE.

Thy life, my life ; such comfort dost thou give :
Happy my life, because I see thee live.

BOMELIO.

Whilst they record the sweetness of their bliss,
I will apply to further, as they wish,
Their¹ sweet delight by magic's cunning so,
That happy they shall live in spite of foe.

HERMIONE.

How doubtful are the lets of loyal love !
Great be the dangers that true lovers prove ;
But when the sun, after a shower of rain,
Breaks through the clouds and shows his might
again,
More comfortable to [us] his glory then,
Because it was awhile withheld of men.
Peace after war is pleasanter, we find ;
A joy deferr'd is sweeter to the mind :
So I——

¹ [Old copy, *then*.]

FIDELIA.

It hath been said that, when Ulysses was
Ten years at Troy, and ten years more, alas !
Wandering abroad as chance and fortune led,
Penelope supposing him for dead :
But he, providing still for afterclaps,
When he had 'scap'd a thousand hard mishaps,
It did him good to reckon up at last
Unto his wife his travails he had pass'd,
And sweetly then recording his distress
To make the more account of happiness.
So I——

HERMIONE.

Then, as the turtle that hath found her mate
Forgets her former woes and wretched state,
Renewing now her drooping heart again,
Because her pleasure overcomes her pain ;
The same of thy desired sight I make,
Whereon thy faith, thy heart and hand I take.

FIDELIA.

And so I swear to thee unfeignedly
To live thine own, and eke thine own to die.

Enter BOMELIO.

BOMELIO.

Gog's blood ! villains ! the devil is in the bed of
straw ! Wounds ! I have been robb'd, robb'd,
robb'd ! where be the thieves ? My books, books !
did I not leave thee with my books ? Where are my
books ? my books ! where be my books, villain ?
arrant villain !

VOL. VI.

P

HERMIONE.

O father ! my dear father, hark.

BOMELIO.

Father, my dear father ! Soul ! give me my books. Let's have no more tarrying : the day begins to be dark ; it rains : it begins with tempests. Thunder and lightning ! fire and brimstone ! And all my books are gone, and I cannot help myself, nor my friends. What a pestilence ! who came there ?

HERMIONE.

I'll tell you, father, if you please to hear.

BOMELIO.

What can'st thou tell me ? tell me of a turd. What, and a' come ? I conjure thee, foul spirit, down to hell ! Ho, ho, ho ! the devil, the devil ! A-comes, a-comes, a-comes upon me, and I lack my books. Help ! help ! help ! Lend me a sword, a sword ! O, I am gone !

[He raves.]

FIDELIA.

Alas ! how fell he to this madding mood ?

HERMIONE.

The heavens and earth deny to do us good !

FIDELIA.

O father ! my good father, look on me.

BOMELIO.

What meant I not to shut up the door, and take the keys with me, and put the books under the bed-straw? Out, you whore! a whore, a whore! Gog's blood! I'll dress you for a whore. I have a cause to curse whores as long as I live. Come away, come away! Give me my books, my books: give me, give me, give! *[Exit.]*

FIDELIA.

Help, help me, good Hermione! *[Exit.]*

HERMIONE.

I come. O¹ worlds of misery!
Confounded on the top of my delight;
The Fates and Fortune thus against me fight. *[Exit.]*

[Enter VENUS and FORTUNE.]

FORTUNE'S *triumph*: *sound trumpets, drums, cornets, and guns.*

FORTUNE.

See, madam, who can dash your bravery,
Even at the pitch of your felicity?
When you assure that they shall steadfast stand,
Even then my power I suddenly can show,
Transposing it, as it had never been so.
Herein I triumph, herein I delight.
Thus have I manifested now my might.
Here, ladies, learn to like of Venus' lure,
And me love—long your pleasures shall endure.

¹ [Mr Collier printed *come of*.]

VENUS.

Now thou hast done even what thou canst, I see,
They shall be once again relieved by me.
[*Music, Music.*]

THE FIFTH ACT.

Enter MERCURY.

Ye goddesses of this eternity,
To whom of right belongs each earthly thing,
The king of gods salutes ye both by me ;
And (I beseech you) mark the news I bring.
My father Jupiter, perceiving well
What hath herein been ¹ done by each of you,
And ² how ye still endeavour to excel,
Maintaining that whereon the quarrel grew—
That is, the government of this estate,
And unto whom the sovereignty shall fall—
Here, therefore, to conclude your long debate,
Lest your contention may be counted general,
Desires ye both, and so commands by me,
Ye stand to his conclusion of the cause.
How say you, therefore ? will you now agree,
That malice may no longer right delude ?

VENUS.

Brother Mercury, as I have never been
So obstinate, or bent so frowardly,
But that I could some time relent the ill—
A woman must a little have her will ;
So am I now resolved for to do
Whatso my father shall entreat me to.

¹ [Old copy, *oft been.*]

² [Old copy, *O.*]

VENUS.

Whom Fortune favours I will not despise.

FORTUNE.

Whom Love rejects by me shall never rise.

MERCURY.

To this conclusion do you both agree?

VENUS.

For my part.

FORTUNE.

And I, most willingly.

MERCURY.

Then let your union be confirmed again
By proper course, each one in his descent
Over mortal men and worldly things to reign
By interchange, as Jupiter hath meant.
And ¹ friendly Fortune, let me entreat, alone—
Sith by your means these lovers hind'red were,
And now ye two are reconcil'd in one,
You grant the[m] grace their honour up to rear.

FORTUNE.²

Sweet Mercury, I give thee my consent.
I will forthwith advance them to renown :

¹ [Above this line Mercury's name is inserted as the speaker : as it seems, unnecessarily.]

² [Old copy, *Venus*.]

And their destruction better to prevent,
They shall relieve them, that did throw them down.

MERCURY.¹

And I my gracious favour will bestow
Upon them all, according to desert ;
And I will help his frenzy ere I go.
That bedlam up and down he[re] plays² his part.

*Enter BOMELIO with HERMIONE and FIDELIA,
with a cope and dagger.*

BOMELIO.

Cot's³ wounds ! ye whore, I am not for your diet.
Hang, rascal, make a leg to me, [or,] by Gog's blood,
I'll stab thee through. What the devil, the devil,
and all my books be gone ! O most accursed man
Bomelio ! Go hide thyself, go hide thyself ! go
hang thyself, go hang ! I'll hang the whore out
of hand ; and as for you, villain,—stand, rascal !
stand !

FIDELIA.

Good father, hear me. Come, take a little rest :
Yea, my sweet father, come, sleep upon my breast.

BOMELIO.

Hark the whore ! See what an impudent whore
it is. Sleep, you whore ? I'll sleep with you anon.
Gog's blood, you whore, I'll hang you up !
[*He threatens her.*]

¹ [Old copy, *Fortune*. It is Mercury who afterwards cures Bomelio.]

² [Old copy, *replaces*.]

³ [Old copy, *Hots*.]

FIDELIA.

Help, help, Hermione !

HERMIONE.

Good father, let her alone. Come, let us go.

[Enter MERCURY invisible.]

MERCURY.

Now with my music I'll recure his woe. [Play.

BOMELIO.

Hark, hark, my hearts ! Pipes, fiddles ! O
brave ! I shall have my books again. Dance
about. Robin Hood is a good knave. Come, Bess,
let's go sleep. Come, Bess ; together, together.

MERCURY.

Now will I charm him, that he shall not wake,
Until he be relieved in this place.
Then take her blood, and cast it on this brake,
And therewithal besprinkle all his face,
And he shall be restored to his sense,
His health and memory, as heretofore.
Do this, for I must now depart from hence,
And so your sorrows shall increase no more.

HERMIONE.

Fidelia, what hast thou heard, my dear ?
O comfortable words, were they but true !
If any god or goddess be so near,
Vouchsafe of pity on our pains to rue.

Delude not with a feigned fantasy
The wretched mind[s] of men in misery.

FIDELIA.

Alas ! Hermione, let us not feed
And flatter ourselves with any ¹ good surmise :
We are too much accursed so to speed,
Or any hope thereof for to devise.
Resolve yourself, dear friend, another way,
And let us never look for happy day.

*Enter PHIZANTIES, ARMENIO, PENULO, and
LENTULO.*

PHIZANTIES.

When thirst of hot revenge inflameth high desire :
When malice kindleth so the minds of them that
would aspire,
That to enlarge their names they reck not his
despite,
That overseeth all their work, their doings to
requite :
Mark, then, what followeth, when princes ye
provoke :
The deeper and the larger wound, when longest is
the stroke !
And this hath moved me to leave my court awhile,
To be content in sweat of brows, in trouble, pain
and toil,
To seek out wretches, them that have abus'd me
so,
And to reward their villainy according, ere we go.

¹ [Old copy, *my*.]

PENULO.

May it please your honour, it is excellent done.
Gog's blood ! and I were a prince, and had such a
noble son,
That should be so highly abused as he hath been,
Would I put it up ? no ; by his wounds, I would
never lin,
Till I had made such a mingle-mangle upon their
nose,
That their skin should serve to make me a doublet
and a pair of hose.

LENTULO.

What, you would not ? i' faith, you look not with
the face :
When you have the skin, sir, what will you do
with the case ?
But, master prince, since you 'are come to this
travallation,
I'll bring you to my old master's convocation,
Where he hides himself, when I ran away :
It's not far within these woods. How think you,
sir, I pray ?

PHIZANTIES.

Lead on the way, and I will follow thee.

LENTULO.

Why, then, come on, my valiant hearts, march on
and follow me.
But I'll make this bargain first : hear you me what
I say ?
When I come home, you shall not let my master
beat me for running away.

PHIZANTIES.

He shall not, I warrant thee.

LENTULO.

Why, then, my noble youths of oak, pluck up your hearts with me.

Will you come, sir? come on, i' faith: keep in order you thereby.

We shall find her i' faith, master prince, anon, I know,

And then I'll trounce him for running away with another man's wife, I trow.

PENULO.

Stand, sir. Who lives a-sunning yonder? can you tell?

LENTULO.

It's a beggar with a rogue.

PHIZANTIES.

It is my daughter, I see full well.

HERMIONE.

Fidelia, be content: shrink not at all.

PHIZANTIES.

Strike not a stroke, my son.

PENULO.

For help I shall go run and call.

PHIZANTIES.

And art thou found, false traitor and untrue,
 Traitor to him that dealt so well with thee?
 Did I devise to stop that would ensue,
 And found my cares such issue as I see?
 I see I am abused too-too much,
 And too much sufferance is cause of this abuse:
 This high abuse of yours, as being such,
 Affords no cloak nor colour of excuse.
 O, where is thankfulness and love become?
 Where is the fear of princes' wrath exil'd?
 Even this is the unhappiness of some,
 To be of them they trusted most beguil'd;
 But sometime pardon breeds a second ill.
 Thou shameless wench, and thou false-hearted
 knight,
 By your unhappy deeds I learn this skill;
 But yet I list not kill thee, as I might.
 Her will I have, and keep her as I may.
 On pain of death I charge thee, hence away!

HERMIONE.

O prince, this sentence hath his force and strength,
 And dead I am that here appear to live;
 For how, alas! can this my life have length
 When she is hence, that life and sense doth give?
 But since, alas! I must be only he,
 Whom Fortune vows to make a common game,
 Armenio, my foe, do this for me—
 With my revenge to end my open shame.
 To help thee to digest thine injury,
 Appease thee with Hermione's tragedy.

FIDELIA.

Far be the thought of that accursed deed,
 O sweet Hermione, my sweet Hermione!

Foul be his fall that makes thy body bleed,
 O sweet Hermione, my sweet Hermione !
 And, father, this I vow : forgive it me,
 I will be sacrifice for this offence,
 And or I will have my Hermione,
 My chosen love, or never part from hence.
 Him hath the destinies ordained mine,
 Most worthy me, your daughter, every way ;
 Nor he to any will his choice resign—
 No more my troubled thoughts will let me say.

PHIZANTIES.

What wilt thou, foolish girl and obstinate ?
 Say'st thou this treason is devis'd by fate ?
 That shall we try. Despatch her hence away.
 Let's see who dares our princely will gainsay.

PENULO.

Sir, and you'll have us carry her, here be them
 come of the carriers.

LENTULO.

And you'll have us marry her, here be them come
 of the marriers.

PENULO.

Lord ! I marvel to whose share this lady will fall :
 I am sure my part in her will be least of all.

VENUS and FORTUNE *show themselves, and speak to*
 PHIZANTIES, *while HERMIONE standeth in amaze.*

VENUS.

High time it is that now we did appear,
 If we desire to end their misery.

FORTUNE.

Phizanties, stay, and unto us give ear.
What thou determin'st performed cannot be.

PHIZANTIES.

Dread goddess whatsoever of this place,
If I herein have disobeyed thy grace,
Of favour grant for to remit the same :
Let me not suffer undeserved blame.

VENUS.

Phizanties, stand up ; be of good cheer.
None but thy friends are met together here—
Thy friends, though goddesses in other things—
Yet interchange an alteration brings.
And now, whereas you seek in what you can
To let your child to marry with this man,
Know that it is the pleasure of our will,
That they together be conjoined still.
For 'tis not so—he is not born so base
As you esteem, but of a noble race.
His father is the good Bomelio,
That sleepeth here oppress'd with woe,
Whom Phalaris thy father, on a false report,
In wrath and anger banished his court :
But this is he, to whom thou wishest oft good,
And this his son, born of a noble blood.
Think it no scorn to thee or thine hereafter
To have his son espoused to thy daughter.

PHIZANTIES.

Right gracious goddess, if this be true indeed,
As I believe, because from you it doth proceed,

Then pardon me, for had I known it so,
 His son had never tasted of this woe.
 Unwitting of his lineage till this time,
 Not,¹ I presumed, sprung of a noble line.
 Put² hence, and please your deities, my grief,
 Because my son is dumb without relief.

PENULO.

I' faith, sirrah, thou and I may hold our peace,
 with their leave,
 For none but wise men speak here, I perceive.

LENTULO.

In some respects so, in some respects not ;
 For a fool's bolt is soon enough shot.

FORTUNE.

Phizanties, fear no longer his distress ;
 The gracious gods provide for his redress.
 The shedding of thy daughter's dearest blood
 Shall both to him and to this man do good ;
 For let this fern be dipp'd in many a place,
 And, as he sleepeth, cast it in his face,
 And let his tongue be washed therewithal,
 And both of them relieved see you shall.

PHIZANTIES.

How say you, daughter, will you grant thereto ?

¹ [Old copy, *But*, which would seem to convey the exact reverse of what Phizanties intends—that he did not know Hermione's birth, but, presuming him to be of obscure birth, did not wish him to marry Fidelia.]

² [Old copy, *But*.]

FIDELIA.

Most willing, sir, if you vouchsafe to do
But this request, which I most humbly pray—
Then I may be Hermione's for aye.

PHIZANTIES.

With all my heart : hereon I give my hand.

FIDELIA.

I take it, sir ; and to your word I stand.
And for thy sake, Hermione, my dear,
See what I do, although it touch me near.
Now take thy fill, and for his madness prove.
[*Bares her breast.*]

HERMIONE.

O sweet and fearful sight, the sign of love !

LENTULO.

If it be any sweeter, masters, that runs from you so,
I pray you give me some of your blessings, ere
you go.

ARMENIO.

I strive to speak, and glad to find my speech.
Forgive, Hermione, forgive me, I beseech.
And you, good sister ; pardon, my friends, too ;
Too rash in all I ventured to do.
See what proceedeth from unstable youth !
Shame to himself, and to his friends a cause of
ruth.

HERMIONE.

Armenio, long hath my mind¹ desired
 To hear the proffer of this pleasant peace,
 Which sith the gods do grant as we require,
 Henceforth let rancour and contention cease,
 And in our breast be knit for ever sure
 The links of love, perpetual to endure.

BOMELIO [*waking*].

What have I heard ? what is it that they say !
 Amazed quite ! confounded every way !
 My son Hermione, I know that is the same !
 And that's my prince : now comes grief and shame !

PHIZANTIES.

My Lord Bomelio, shun not ; I know you now.
 Forgive the fact my father did to you ;
 And what he did, impute it not to me.
 Thy former place I will restore to thee.
 In token of our faithful amity,
 We will be joined in near affinity.

BOMELIO.

Long live Phizanties, long live in happy ease ;
 The gods be bless'd I live this day to see !
 What please the one, shall never me displease :
 Thrice happy now for all my misery.

PENULO.

Why then, sir, sith everything is come to so good
 an end,

¹ [Old copy, *end*.]

I hope, my good master, you'll stand-by my good
friend,
And give me but two or three thousand pound
a year to live on.

LENTULO.

Much in my nock, Nichols :¹ you and I shall slave
it anon.

ARMENIO.

Assure thee, Penulo, thou shalt not want as long
as I live.

LENTULO.

Why then, master, mine old master, I pray you
forgive
Your old runaway. 'Twas for fashion-sake : I'll
do so no more.

BOMELIO.

Look you do not, sirrah, and then I pardon you
therefore.

[*Enter VENUS and FORTUNE.*]

VENUS.

Thus everything united is by Love.
Now gods and men are reconcil'd again ;
On whom, because I did my pleasure prove,
I will reward you for your former pain.
Receive the favours of our deity,
And sing the praise of Venus' sovereignty.

¹ [Evidently a proverbial expression, of which the import can only be obscurely gathered from the context. *Nock* is the same, of course, as *hock*.]

FORTUNE.

And for I play'd my part with Lady Love,
While each did strive for chief authority,
Your good deserts Dame Fortune so doth move
To give these signs of liberality.
Thus for amends of this your late unrest,
By Love and Fortune you shall all be blest.
And thus hereof this inward care I have,
That Wisdom ruleth Love, and Fortune both :
Though riches fail, and beauty seem to save,
Yet wisdom forward still unconquered go'th.
This, we beseech you, take friendly in worth ;
And sith by Love and Fortune our troubles all do
 cease,
God save her majesty, that keeps us all in peace.
Now they and we do all triumph in joy,
And Love and Fortune are linked sure friends :
All grief is fled ; for your annoy
Fortune and Love makes all amends.
Let us rejoice, then, in the same,
And sing high praises of their name.

FINIS.

THE THREE LADIES OF LONDON.

EDITION.

[A right excellent and famous Comædy called the Three Ladies of London. Wherein is Notablie declared and set forth, how by the meanes of Lucar, Loue and Conscience is so corrupted, that the one is married to Disimulation, the other fraught with all abomination. A Perfect Patterne for All Estates to looke into, and a worke right worthie to be marked. Written by R. W. as it hath been publiquely played. At London, Printed by Roger Warde, dwelling neere Holburne Conduit, at the signe of the Talbot. 1584.¹ 4°. Black letter.]

¹ [There was a second edition, presenting considerable variations, generally for the better, in 1592. See Hazlitt's "Handbook," 1867, p. 466.]

THE PROLOGUE.

To sit on honour's seat it is a lofty reach :
To seek for praise by making brags oftentimes doth
 get a breach.
We list not ride the rolling racks that dims the
 crystal skies,
We mean to set no glimmering glance before your
 courteous eyes :
We search not Pluto's pensive pit, nor taste of
 Limbo lake ;
We do not show of warlike fight, as sword and
 shield to shake :
We speak not of the powers divine, ne yet of
 furious sprites ;
We do not seek high hills to climb, nor talk of
 love's delights.
We do not here present to you the thresher with
 his flail,
Ne do we here present to you the milkmaid with
 her pail :
We show not you of country toil, as hedger with
 his bill ;
We do not bring the husbandman to lop and top
 with skill :
We play not here the gardener's part, to plant, to
 set and sow :
You marvel, then, what stuff¹ we have to furnish
 out our show.

¹ [For *stuff* the edit. of 1592 substitutes *wares*.]

Your patience yet we crave a while, till we have
trimm'd our stall ;
Then, young and old, come and behold our wares,
and buy them all.
Then, if our wares shall seem to you well-woven,
good and fine,
We hope we shall your custom have again another
time.

THE THREE LADIES OF LONDON.

THE FIRST ACT.

*Enter FAME, sounding before LOVE and
CONSCIENCE.*

LOVE.

Lady Conscience, what shall we say to our estates?
to whom shall we complain?

Or how shall we abridge such fates as heapeth up
our pain?

✓ 'Tis Lucre now that rules the rout: 'tis she is all
in all:

'Tis she that holds her head so stout; in fine, 'tis
she that works our fall.

O Conscience! I fear, I fear a day,

✓ That we by her and Usury shall quite be cast
away.

CONSCIENCE.

Indeed, I fear the worst, for every man doth sue,
And comes from countries strange and far of her
to have a view.

Although they ought to seek true Love and Con-
science clear;

But Love and Conscience few do like that lean on
Lucre's chair.

Men ought be rul'd by us ; we ought in them bear
sway,

So should each neighbour live by other in good
estate alway.

LOVE.

For Lucre men come from Italy, Barbary, Turkey,
From Jewry ; nay, the Pagan himself
Endangers his body to gape for her pelf.

They forsake mother, prince, country, religion, kiff
and kin ;

Nay, men care not what they forsake, so Lady
Lucre they win ;

That we poor ladies may sigh to see our states
thus turned and tost,

And worse and worse is like to be, where Lucre
rules the roost.

CONSCIENCE.

✓ You say the truth, yet God, I trust, will not admit
it so,

That Love and Conscience by Lucre's lust shall
catch an overthrow.

FAME.

Good ladies, rest content, and you, no doubt, shall
see

Them plagued with painful punishment for such
their cruelty :

And if true Love and Conscience live from Lucre's
lust lascivious,

Then Fame a triple crown will give, which lasteth
aye victorious.

CONSCIENCE.

God grant that Conscience keep within the bounds
of right,
And that vile Lucre do not haunt her heart with
deadly spite.

LOVE.

And grant, O God, that Love be found in city,
town, and country,
Which causeth wealth and peace abound, and
pleaseth God Almighty.

FAME.

But, ladies, is't your pleasure to walk abroad a
while,
And recreate yourselves with measure, your sor-
rows to beguile?

CONSCIENCE.

Pass on, good Fame ; your steps do frame ; on you
we will attend,
And pray to God, that holds the rod, our states for
to defend. [*Exeunt.*]

THE SECOND ACT.¹

*Enter DISSIMULATION, having on a farmer's long
coat and a cap, and his poll and beard painted
motley.*

DISSIMULATION.

Nay, no less than a farmer, a right honest man,
But my tongue cannot stay me to tell what I am :

¹ This division is omitted in the edition of 1592, and it
seems unnecessary.

Nay, who is it that knows me not by my party-colour'd head?

They may well think, that see me, my honesty is fled.

Tush! a fig for honesty: tut, let that go,
Sith men, women and children my name and doings do know.

My name is Dissimulation, and no base mind I bear,

For my outward effects my inward zeal do declare;

For men do dissemble with their wives, and their wives with them again,

So that in the hearts of them I always remain.

The child dissembles with his father, the sister with her¹ brother,

The maiden with her mistress, and the young man with his lover.²

There is dissimulation between neighbour and neighbour, friend and friend, one with another,

Between the servant and his master, between brother and brother.

Then, why make you it strange that ever you knew me,

Seeing so how³ I range thoroughout every degree?

But I forget my business: I'll towards London as fast⁴ I can,

To get entertainment of one of the three ladies, like an honest man.

¹ [Old copy, *his*.]

² [Sweetheart, mistress.]

³ [Old copy, *often*.]

⁴ [We should now say, "as fast as;" but the form in the text is not uncommon in early literature.]

*Enter SIMPLICITY like a miller, all mealy,
with a wand in his hand.*

SIMPLICITY.

[They say there is preferment in London to have :
Mass, and there be, I'll be passing and brave.
Why, I'll be no more a miller, because the maidens
call me Dusty-poll ;
One thumps me on the neck, and another strikes
me on the nol :
And you see I am a handsome fellow : mark the
comportnance¹ of my stature..
Faith, I'll go seek peradventures,² and be a serv-
ing-creature.

DISSIMULATION.

Whither away, good fellow ! I pray thee, declare.

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, I'll 'clare thee : to London ; would thou
didst go there.

DISSIMULATION.

What if I did ? would it be better for thee ?

SIMPLICITY.

Ay, marry should it, for I love honest company.

DISSIMULATION.

Agreed ; there is a bargain : but what shall I call
thee ?

¹ [An intentional corruption, perhaps for *importance*.]

² [Adventures.]

SIMPLICITY.

'Cause thou art an honest man, I'll tell thee : my name is Simplicity.

DISSIMULATION.

A name agreeing to thy nature [*Aside*] : but stay ; here comes more company.

Enter FRAUD with a sword and buckler, like a ruffian.

FRAUD.

Huff ! once aloft, and I may hit in the right vein,
Where I may beguile easily without any great pain.

I will flaunt it and brave it after the lusty swash :¹
I'll deceive thousands. What care I who lie in the lash ?²

DISSIMULATION.

What, Fraud ! well met. Whither travellest thou this way ?

FRAUD.

To London, to get entertainment there, if I may,
Of the three ladies Lucre, Love, and Conscience.
I care not whom I serve—the devil, so I may get pence.³

SIMPLICITY.

O Fraud ! I know thee for a deceitful knave ;
And art thou gotten so bonfacion⁴ and brave ?

¹ [Swaggerer, hence the well-known term, *swash-buckler*, for a roaring blade.]

² [In the snare : What care I who gets caught ?]

³ *What care I to serve the Devil,* " &c., edit. 1592.

⁴ [Edit. 1584 has *boniacion*.]

I knew thee, when thou dwelledst at a place called
 Gravesend,
 And the guests knew thee too, because thou wast
 not their friend ;
 For when thou shouldst bring reckoning to the
 guests,
 Thou wouldst put¹ twice so much, and swear it cost
 thy dame no less.
 So thou didst deceive them and thy dame
 too ;
 And because they spied thy knavery, away thou
 didst go.
 Then thou didst go into Hertfordshire, to a place
 called Ware,
 And because horses stood at hay for a penny a
 night there,
 So that thou couldst get nothing that kind of
 way,
 Thou didst grease the horses' teeth, that they
 should not eat hay : -
 Then thou wouldst tell the rider his horse no hay
 would eat.
 Then the man would say : Give him some other
 kind of meat.
 Sir, shall I give him oats, vetches, pease, barley, or
 bread ?
 But whate'er thou gavest him, thou stolest three
 quarters, when he was in bed.
 And now thou art so proud with thy filching and
 cosening art !
 But I think one day thou wilt not be proud of the
 rope and the cart.
 Take a wise fellow's counsel, Fraud : leave thy
 cosening and filching.

¹ [Old copies, *but*.]

FRAUD.

Thou whoreson rascal swad,¹ avaunt! I'll bang thee for thy brawling.
How darest thou defame a gentleman, that hath so large a living?

SIMPLICITY.

A goodly gentleman ostler! I think none of all you will believe him.

FRAUD.

What a clenchpoop² drudge is this! I can forbear him no more.

[Let FRAUD make as though he would strike him, but let DISSIMULATION step between them.]

DISSIMULATION.

My good friend Fraud, refrain, and care not therefore.

'Tis Simplicity, that patch; he knoweth not good from bad,

And to stand in contention with him I would think you were mad.

But tell me, Fraud, tell me, hast thou been an ostler in thy days?

FRAUD.

Tut, I have proved an hundred such ways;
For when I could not thrive by all other trades,

¹ [A simpleton or bumpkin.]

² [A term of contempt, of which the meaning is not obvious. It might seem to indicate a person employed in attending to a house of office.]

I became a squire to wait upon jades.¹
 But then was then, and now is now; but let that
 pass:
 I am, as thou seest me; what care I the devil what
I was?

DISSIMULATION.

You say, you go to London: in faith, have with
 you then.

SIMPLICITY.

Nay, come and go with me, good, honest man;
 For if thou go with him, he will teach thee all his
 knavery.
 There is none will go with him that hath any
 honesty.
 A bots² on thy motley beard! I know thee; thou
 art Dissimulation:
 And hast thou got an honest man's coat to 'semble
 this fashion?
 I'll tell thee what, thou wilt even 'semble and cog
 with thine own father:
 A couple of false knaves together, a thief and a
 broker.
 Thou makes townsfolds believe thou art an honest
 man: in the country
 Thou dost nothing but cog, lie, and foist with
 Hypocrisy.
 You shall be hanged together, and go along³ to-
 gether for me,
 For if I should go, the folks would say, we were
 knaves all three.

¹ [A bully.]
 VOL. VI.

² [i.e., pos.]

³ [Old copies, *alone*.
 R

Enter SIMONY and USURY, hand in hand.

SIMONY.

Friend Usury, I think we are well near at our
journey's end.
But knowest thou whom I have espied ?

USURY.

No.

SIMONY.

Fraud, our great friend.

USURY.

And I see another, that is now come into my
remembrance.

SIMONY.

Who is that ?

USURY.

Marry, Master Davy Dissimulation, a good helper,
and our old acquaintance.

SIMPLICITY.

(Now all the cards in the stock are dealt about,
The four knaves in a cluster comes ruffling out.

SIMONY.

What, Fraud and Dissimulation ! happily found
out.
I marvel what piece of work you two go about.

FRAUD.

Faith, sir, we met by chance, and towards London
are bent.

USURY.

And to London we hie : it is our chiefest intent,
To see if we can get entertainment of the Ladies
or no.

DISSIMULATION.

And for the selfsame matter even thither we go.

SIMONY.

Then, we are luckily well-met ; and, seeing we wish
all for one thing,
I would we our wills and wishing might win.

SIMPLICITY.

Yes, they will be sure to win the devil and all,
Or else they'll make a man to spew out his gall.
O that vild¹ Usury ! he lent my father a little
money, and for breaking one day
He took the fee-simple of his house and mill quite
away :
And yet he borrowed not half a quarter as much
as it cost ;
But I think, if it had been a shilling, it had been
lost.
So he kill'd my father with sorrow, and undoe'd me
quite.
And you deal with him, sirs, you shall find him a
knave full of spite.

¹ [Vile.]

And Simony—A-per-se-A-Simony—too, he is a
knave for the nonce :

He loves to have twenty livings at once ;
And if he let an honest man, as I am, to have one,
He'll let it so dear that he shall be undone.
And he seeks to get parsons' livings into his hand,
And puts in some odd dunce that to his payment
will stand :

So, if the parsonage be worth forty or fifty pound
a year,

He will give one twenty nobles to mumble service
once a month there.

SIMONY and USURY both.

What rascal is he, that speaketh by us such vil-
lainy ?

DISSIMULATION.

Sirs, he was at us erewhile too ; it is no matter :
it is a simple soul, called Simplicity.
But here come two of the ladies ; therefore make
ready.

Enter LOVE and CONSCIENCE.

FRAUD.

But which of us all shall first break the matter ?

DISSIMULATION

Marry, let Simony do it, for he finely can flatter.

USURY.

Nay, sirs, because none of us shall have prehemin-
ence above other,

We will sing in fellowship together, like brother
and brother.

SIMONY.

Of truth, agreed, my masters : let it be so.

SIMPLICITY.

Nay, and they sing, I'll sing too. [Aside.

The Song.

Good ladies, take pity and grant our desire.

CONSCIENCE' REPLY.

Speak boldly, and tell me what is't you require.

THEIR REPLY.

Your service, good ladies, is what we do crave.

HER REPLY.

We like not, nor list not such servants to have.

THEIR REPLY.

If you entertain us, we trusty will be ;
But if you refrain us, then most unhappy.
We will come, we will run, we will bend at your
beck,
We will ply, we will hie, for fear of your check.

HER REPLY.

You do feign, you do flatter : you do lie, you do
prate :

You will steal, you will rob : you will kill in your hate.

I deny you, I defy you ; then cease of your talking :

I refrain you, I disdain you ; therefore, get you walking.

CONSCIENCE.

What, Fraud, Dissimulation, Usury, and Simony,
How dare you for shame presume so boldly,
As once to show yourselves before Love and Conscience,

Not yielding your lewd lives first to repentance ?
Think you not, that God will plague you for your wicked practices,

If you intend not to amend your vild lives so amiss !¹

Think you not, God knows your thoughts, words, and works,

And what secret mischiefs in the hearts of you lurks ?

Then how dare you offend his heavenly majesty
With your dissembling deceit, your flattery, and your usury ?

FRAUD.

Tut, sirs, seeing Lady Conscience is so scripulous,²
Let us not speak to her, for I see it is frivolous.
But what say you, Lady Love ? Will you grant us favour.

LOVE.

I'll no such servants, so ill of behaviour,
Servants more fitter for Lucre than Love,

¹ *Your liues so farre amisse*, edit. 1592.

² [Scrupulous.]

And happy are they which refrain for to prove,
Shameless, pitiless, graceless, and quite past
honesty;
Then who of good conscience but will hate your
company?

USURY.

Here is scripulous Conscience and nice Love indeed.
Tush! if they will not, others will: I know we
shall speed.

SIMPLICITY.

But, lady, I stand still behind, for I am none of
their company.

CONSCIENCE.

Why, what art thou? O, I know: thou art Simplicity.

SIMPLICITY.

I' faith, I am Simplicity, and would fain serve ye.

CONSCIENCE.

No: I may have no fools to dwell with me.

SIMPLICITY.

Why then, Lady Love, will you have me then?

LOVE.

Ay, Simplicity, thou shalt be my man.

SIMPLICITY.

But shall I be your good-man ?

LOVE.

Ay, my good-man, indeed.

SIMPLICITY.

Ay, but I would be your good-man, and swap up
a wedding with good speed.

LOVE.

No : Love may not marry in any case with Sim-
plicity ;

But if thou wilt serve me, I'll receive it willingly :
And if thou wilt not, what remedy ?

SIMPLICITY.

Yes, I will serve ye : but will ye go into dinner,
for I am hungry ?

LOVE.

Come, Lady Conscience : pleaseth you to walk home
from this company ?

CONSCIENCE.

With right goodwill, for their sights pleaseth not
me. [*Exeunt* LADY LOVE and CONSCIENCE.]

SIMPLICITY.¹

Fraud is the clubbish knave, and Usury the hard-
hearted knave,
And Simony the diamon' dainty knave,
And Dissimulation the spiteful knave of spade.
Come there any mo knaves? come there any mo?
I see four knaves stand in a row.

[*Let FRAUD run at him,² and let SIMPLICITY
run in, and come out again straight.*

FRAUD.

Away, drudge! begone quickly.

SIMPLICITY.

I wous:³ do thrust out my eyes with a lady.
[*Exit SIMPLICITY.*

USURY.

Did you ever see gentlemen so rated at before?
But it skills not: I hope one day to turn them
both out of door.

SIMONY.

We were arrantly flouted, railed at, and scoff'd in
our kind.
That same Conscience is a vild terror to man's
mind.
Yet, faith, I care not, for I have borne many more
than these,
When I was conversant with the clergy beyond
the seas;

¹ [Old copies, *Fraud.*] ² [Dissimulation.]
³ [Edit. 1592, *I wis.*]

And he that will live in this world must not care
 what such say,
 For they are blossoms blown down, not to be found
 after May.

FRAUD.

Faith, care that care will, for I care not a point.
 I have shifted¹ hitherto, and whilst I live I will
 jeopard a joint ;
 And at my death I will leave my inheritor behind,
 That shall be of the right stamp to follow my
 mind.
 Therefore let them prate, till their hearts ache, and
 spit out their evil :
 She cannot quail me, if she came in likeness of the
 great devil.

DISSIMULATION.

Mass, Fraud, thou hast a doughty heart to make a
 hangman of,
 For thou hast good skill to help men from the coff.
 But we were arrantly flouted, yet I thought she
 had not known me ;
 But I perceive, though Dissimulation do disguise
 him, Conscience can see.
 What though Conscience perceive it, all the world
 cannot beside,
 Tush ! there be a thousand places, where we our-
 selves may provide.
 But look, sirs ; here cometh a lusty lady towards
 us in haste ;
 But speak to her, if you will, that we may be all
 plac'd.

¹ [Edit. 1584, *shift* &c.]

Enter LADY LUCRE.

USURY.

I pray thee do, for thou art the likeliest to speed.

DISSIMULATION.

Why then I'll tout with a stomach in hope of good speed.

Fair lady, all the gods of good fellowship kiss ye—
I would say bless ye——

LUCRE.

Thou art very pleasant, and full of thy rope-ripe—
I would say rethoric.

DISSIMULATION.

Lady, you took me at the worst: I beseech you
therefore
To pardon my boldness, offending no more.

LUCRE.

We do; the matter is not great, but what wouldest
thou have?
How shall I call thee, and what is't thou dost
crave?

DISSIMULATION.

I am called Dissimulation, and my earnest request
Is to crave entertainment for me and the rest,
Whose names are Fraud, Usury, and Simony,
Great carers for your health, wealth, and pro-
sperity.

Lucre

LUCRE.

Fraud, Dissimulation, Usury, and Simony,
Now truly I thank you for proffering your service
to me ;
You are all heartily welcome, and I will appoint
straightway,
Where each one in his office in great honour shall
stay.
But, Usury, didst thou never know my grand-
mother, the old Lady Lucre of Venice ?

USURY.

Yes, madam ; I was servant unto her, and lived
there in bliss.

LUCRE.

But why camest thou into England, seeing Venice
is a city,
Where Usury by Lucre may live in great glory ?

USURY.

I have often heard your good grandmother tell,
That she had in England a daughter, which her far
did excel ;
And that England was such a place for Lucre to
bide,
As was not in Europe and the whole world beside.
Then, lusting greatly to see you and the country,
she being dead,
I made haste to come over to serve you in her
stead.

LUCRE.

Gramercy, Usury ; and I doubt not but that you
shall live here as pleasantly ;

Ay, and pleasanter, too, if it may be. But, Simony,
from whence came ye, tell me ?¹

SIMONY.

My birth, nursery and bringing-up hitherto hath
been in Rome, that ancient religious city.
On a time the monks and friars made a banquet,
whereunto they invited me,
With certain other some English merchants, which
belike were of their familiarity ;
So, talking of many matters, amongst others one
began to debate
Of the abundant substance still brought to that
state.
Some said the increase of their substance and
wealth
Came from other princes, and was brought thither
by stealth :
But the friars and monks, with all the ancient
company,
Said that it first came, and is now upholden by
me, Simony ;
Which the English merchants gave ear to : then
they flattered a little too much,
As Englishmen can do for advantage, when increase
it doth touch ;
And being a-shipboard merry, and overcome with
drink on a day,
The wind served, they hoist sail, and so brought
me away :
And landing here, I heard in what great estima-
tion you were,

¹ This speech stands as follows in edit. 1592—

“Gramercie, Usury ; and doubt not but to live here as pleasantly,
And pleasanter too : but whence came you, Symonie, tell me ?”

[And] made bold to your honour to make my repair.

LUCRE.

Well, Simony, I thank thee ; but as for Fraud and
Dissimulation,
I know their long continuance, and after what
fashion.
Therefore, Dissimulation, you shall be my Steward,
An office that every man's case by you must be
preferred.
And you, Fraud, shall be my rent-gatherer, my
letter of leases, and my purchaser of land,
So that many old bribes will come to thy hand.
And, Usury, because I know you be trusty, you
shall be my secretary,
To deal amongst merchants, to bargain and ex-
change money.
And Simony, because you are a sly fellow, and
have your tongue liberal,
I will place you over such matters as are ecclesi-
astical.
And though we appoint sundry offices, where now
ye are in,
Yet jointly we mean to use you together oftentimes
in one thing.

ALL.

Lady, we rest at your command in ought we can
or may.

LUCRE.

Then, Master Davy, to my palace haste thee away,
And will Crafty Conveyance, my butler, to make
ready
The best fare in the house to welcome thee and
thy company.

But stay, Dissimulation, I myself will go with thee.
Gentlemen, I'll go before ; but pray, in any case,
So soon as ye please, resort to my place.

[*Exeunt DISSIMULATION and LUCRE.*]

SIMONY.

I warrant you, lady,¹ we will not long absent be.

USURY.

Fellow Simony, this fell out pat, so well as heart
could wish.

We are cunning anglers : we have caught the
fattest fish.

I perceive it is true that her grandmother told :
Here is good to be done by use of silver and gold.
And sith I am so well settled in this country,
I will pinch all, rich and poor, that come to me.

SIMONY.

And sirrah, when I was at Rome, and dwelt in the
Friary,

They would talk how England yearly sent over a
great mass of money,

And that this little island was more worth to the
Pope,

Than three bigger realms which had a great deal
more scope ;

For here were smoke-pence, Peter-pence, and Paul-
pence to be paid,

¹ *Doubt not, faire ladie*, edit. 1592. In the next line but two, edit. 1592 has *certainly* for "I perceane," and the last two lines of the speech run as follows—

"And seeing we are so well settled in this country,
Rich and poore shall be pincht, whosoever come to me."

Besides much other money that to the Pope's use
was made.

Why, it is but lately since the Pope received this
fine,

Not much more than twenty-six years—it was in
Queen Mary's time.¹

But I think England had never known what this
gear had meant,

If Friar Austin from the Pope had not hither been
sent ;

For the Pope, hearing it to be a little island, sent
him with a great army over,

And winning the victory, he landed about Rye,
Sandwich, or Dover :

Then he erected laws, having the people in sub-
jection ;

So for the most part England hath paid tribute so
long—

I, hearing of the great store and wealth in the
country,

Could not choose but persuade myself the people
loved Simony.

USURY.

But stay your talk till some other time : we forget
my lady.

SIMONY.

Of troth you say true, for she bad us make haste :

[*Aside.*] But my talk, me-thought, savoured well,
and had a good taste. [*Exeunt ambo.*]

¹ When this drama was reprinted in 1592, the interval between 1584 and that date made it necessary to read 33 years for "26 yeares" in this line. It is a curious note of time.

Enter MERCATORE like an Italian Merchant.

MERCATORE.

I judge in my mind a, dat me be not vare far
From da place where dwells my Lady Lucar.
But here come an shentlymane, a, soe he do.

[*Enter DISSIMULATION.*
Shentleman, I pray you heartily, let me speak you.
Pray you, do you not know a shentleman dat
Master Davy do call ?

DISSIMULATION.

Yes, marry, do I : I am he, and what would you
withal ?

MERCATORE.

Gooda my friend, Master Davy, help me, pray you
heartily,
For a some-a acquaintance a with Madonna Lucar,
your lady.

DISSIMULATION.

Sir, upon condition I will : therefore I would you
should know,
That on me and my fellows you must largely be-
stow ;
Whose names are Fraud, Usury, and Simony, men
of great credit and calling,
And to get my lady's goodwill and theirs it is no
small thing.
But tell me, can you be content to win Lucre by
Dissimulation ?

VOL. VI.

8

MERCATORE.

A, gooda my friend, do axe-a me no shush a question,
 For he dat will live in the world must be of the
 world sure ;
 And de world will love his own, so long as the
 world endure.

DISSIMULATION.

I commend your wit, sir ; but here comes my lady.

Enter LUCRE.

MERCATORE.

Come hither : here's to tree crowns for de speak
 me.

DISSIMULATION.

Well, sir, I thank you : I will go speak for you.

LUCRE.

Master Davy Dissimulation, what new acquaint-
 ance have ye gotten there ?

DISSIMULATION.

Such a one, madam, that unto your state hath great
 care ;
 And surely in my mind the gentleman is worthy
 To be well-thought on for his liberality, bounty,
 and great care to seek ye.

LUCRE.

Gentleman, you are heartily welcome : how are
 you called, I pray you tell us ?

MERCATORE.

Madonna, me be a merschant, and be call'd Signor
Mercatore.

LUCRE.

But, I pray you, tell me what countryman?

MERCATORE.

Me be, Madonna, an Italian.

LUCRE.

Yet let me trouble ye : I beseech ye whence came
ye?

MERCATORE.

For *salva vostra buona grazia*,¹ me come from
Turkey.

LUCRE.

Gramercy : but Signor Mercatore, dare you not to
undertake
Secretly to convey good commodities out of this
country for my sake?

MERCATORE.

Madonna, me do for love of you tink no pain too
mush,
And to do anyting for you me will not grush :
Me will a forsake a my fader, moder, king, country,
and more dan dat ;

¹ [This is given in the old copies, *salva vostra boungrace*,
but surely *Mercatore* was not intended to blunder in his own
language.]

Me will lie and forswear meself for a quarter so much as my hat.

What is dat for love of Lucre me dare, or will not do ?

Me care not for all the world, the great devil, nay, make my God angry for you.

LUCRE.

You say well, Mercatore ; yet Lucre by this is not thoroughly won :

But give ear, and I will show what by thee must be done.

Thou must carry over wheat, pease, barley, oats, and vetches, and all kind of grain, Which is well sold beyond sea, and bring such merchants great gain.

Then thou must carry beside leather, tallow, beef, bacon, bell-metal and everything,

And for these good commodities trifles into England thou must bring ;

As bugles to make bables, coloured bones, glass beads to make bracelets withal,

For every day gentlewomen of England do ask for such trifles from stall to stall :

And you must bring more, as amber, jet, coral, crystal, and every such babble,

That is slight, pretty and pleasant : they care not to have it profitable.

And if they demand wherefore your wares and merchandise agree,

You must say jet will take up a straw : amber will make one fat :

Coral will look pale, when you be sick, and crystal staunch blood :

So with lying, flattering and glosing you must utter your ware,

And you shall win me to your will, if you can deceitfully swear.

MERCATORE.

Tink ye not dat me have carried over corn, leader,
beef and bacon too, all tis while ?
And brought heder many babbles dese countrymen
to beguile ?
Yes ; shall me tell you, Madonna ? me and my
countrymans have sent over
Bell-metal for make ordnance, yea, and ordnance
itself beside,
Dat my country and oder countries be so well
furnish as dis country, and has never been
spid.

LUCRE.

Now I perceive you love me ; and if you continuë
in this still,
You shall not only be with me, but command me
when and where you will.

MERCATORE.

Lady, for to do all dis and more for you me be
content ;
But I tink some skall¹ knave will put a bill in da
Parliament,
For dat such a tings shall not be brought here.

LUCRE.

Tush, Mercatore ! I warrant thee, thou needest not
to fear.

¹ [Scald.]

What, and one do I there is some other will flatter,
 and say
 They do no hurt to the country, and with a sleight
 fetch that bill away.
 And if they do not, so that by Act of Parliament it
 be pass'd,
 I know you merchants have many a sleight and
 subtle cast,
 So that you will by stealth bring over great store,
 And say it was in the realm a long time before.
 For being so many of these trifles here, as there
 are at this day,
 You may increase them at pleasure, when you send
 over sea;
 And do but give the searcher an odd bribe in his
 hand,
 I warrant you, he will let you 'scape roundly with
 such things in and out the land.
 But, Signor Mercatore, I pray you walk in with
 me,
 And as I find you kind to me, so will I favour ye.

MERCATORE.

Me tank you, my good lady. But, Master Dissi-
 mulation, here is for your fellows, Fraud,
 Usury, and Simony, and say me give it dem.
 [*Exeunt LUCRE and MERCATORE.*]

DISSIMULATION.

Ay marry, sir, these bribes have welcome¹ been.
 Good faith, I perceive, Dissimulation, Fraud, Usury,
 and Simony shall live

¹ Omitted in edit. 1584.

In spite of Love and Conscience, though their
 hearts it doth grieve.
 Mass, masters, he that cannot lie, cog, dissemble
 and flatter now-a-days,
 Is not worthy to live in the world, nor in the court
 to have praise.

Enter ARTIFEX, an Artificer.

ARTIFEX.

I beseech you, good Master Dissimulation, befriend
 a poor man
 To serve Lady Lucre ; and sure, sir, I'll consider it
 hereafter, if I can.

DISSIMULATION.

What, consider me ? dost thou think that I am a
 bribetaker ?
 Faith, it lies not in me to further thy matter.

ARTIFEX.

Good Master Dissimulation, help me : I am almost
 quite undone ;
 But yet my living hitherto with Conscience I have
 won,
 But my true working, my early rising, and my late
 going to bed
 Is scant able to find myself, wife and children dry
 bread :
 For there be such a sort of strangers in this
 country,
 That work fine to please the eye, though it be
 deceitfully ;

And that which is slight, and seems to the eye
well,
Shall sooner than a piece of good work be pro-
fered to sell ;
And our Englishmen be grown so foolish and nice,
That they will not give a penny above the ordinary
price.

DISSIMULATION.

Faith, I cannot help thee : 'tis my fellow Fraud
must pleasure thee.
Here comes my fellow Fraud : speak to him, and
I'll do what I can.

Enter FRAUD.

ARTIFEX.

I beseech you be good unto me, right honest
gentleman.

FRAUD.

Why and whereto ? what wouldest thou have me
do ?

ARTIFEX.

That my poor estate you will so much prefer,
As to get me to be a workman to Lady Lucre ;
And, sir, I doubt not but to please you so well for
your pain,
That you shall think very well of me, if I in her
service remain.

DISSIMULATION.

Good fellow Fraud, do so much ; for I see he is very
willing to live,

And some piece of work to thee for thy pains he
will give.

FRAUD.

Well, upon that condition I will ; but I care not
so much for his gifts,
As that he will by my name declare how he came
by his great thrifts,
And that he will set out in every kind of thing,
That Fraud is a good husband, and great profit
doth bring.
Therefore the next piece of work that thou dost
make,
Let me see how deceitful thou wilt do it for my
sake.

ARTIFEX.

Yes, I will, sir ; of that be you sure :
I'll honour your name, while life doth endure.

DISSIMULATION.

Fellow Fraud, here comes a citizen, as I deem.

FRAUD.

Nay, rather a lawyer, or some pettifogger he doth
seem.

Enter a LAWYER.

LAWYER.

Gentlemen, my earnest suit is to desire ye,
That unto your lady's service you would help me ;
For I am an attorney of the law, and pleader at
the bar,
And have a great desire to plead for Lady Lucre.

I have been earnest, sir, as is needful in such a
 case,
 For fear another come before me, and obtain my
 place.

(I have pleaded for Love and Conscience, till I was
 weary :

I had many clients, and many matters that made
 my purse light, and my heart heavy :

Therefore let them plead for Conscience that list
 for me ;

I'll plead no more for such as brings nothing but
 beggary.

DISSIMULATION.

Sir, upon this condition that you will keep men in
 the law

Ten or twelve years for matters that are not worth
 a straw,

And that you will make an ill matter seem good
 and firmable indeed,

Faith, I am content for my part you shall speed.

FRAUD.

Nay, fellow, thou knowest that Simony and Usury
 hath an ill-matter in law at this time ;

Now, if thou canst handle the matter so subtle and
 fine,

As to plead that ill-matter good and firmable at
 the bar,

Then thou shalt show thyself worthy to win Lady
 Lucre.

Therefore tell me if you can or will do it, or no :

If you do it, be sure to get my lady's goodwill,
 ere you go.

DISSIMULATION.

By my honesty, well-rememb'ed : I had quite
forgot ;
'Tis about that a fortnight ago fell out, the matter
I wot.

LAWYER.

Tush, sir, I can make black white, and white black
again.
Tut, he that will be a lawyer must have a thousand
ways to feign :
And many times we lawyers do one befriend
another,
And let good matters slip ! tut, we agree like
brother and brother.
Why, sir, what shall let us to wrest and turn the
law as we list,
Seeing we have them printed in the palms of our
fist ?
Therefore doubt you not, but make bold report,
That I came and will plead their ill-cause in good
kind of sort.

FRAUD.

Of troth, how likest thou this fellow, Dissimulation ?

DISSIMULATION.

Marry, I like him well : he is a cunning clerk, and
one of our profession.
But come, sir, go with us, and we will prefer you.

ARTIFEX.

Good Master Fraud, remember me.

FRAUD.

Leave thy prating : I will, I tell thee.

ARTIFEX.

Good Master Dissimulation, think on me.

DISSIMULATION.

Thou art too importunate and greedy.

FRAUD.

Come after dinner, or some other time, when we
are at leisure.

[DISSIMULATION, FRAUD, and LAWYER *exeunt*.

ARTIFEX.

Come after dinner, or some other time ! I think
so¹ indeed,

For full little do they think of a poor man's
need.

✓ These fellows will do nothing for pity and love,
And thrice happy are they that hath no need them
to prove.

God he knows the world is grown to such a
stay,

That men must use Fraud and Dissimulation too,
or beg by the way.

Therefore I'll do as the most doth ; the fewest
shall laugh me to scorn,

And be a fellow amongst good fellows to hold by
St Luke's horn. [*Exit*.

¹ *I think so* is omitted in the second 4°.

Enter SIMPLICITY and SINCERITY.

SINCERITY.

Good Cousin Simplicity, do somewhat for me.

SIMPLICITY.

Yes, faith, Cousin Sincerity, I'll do anything for thee.

What wouldst for me to do for thee? canst tell that?

[SINCERITY.]

Mass, I cannot tell what shouldst do for me, except thou wouldst give me a new hat.

SIMPLICITY.

Alas! I am not able to give thee a new.

Why, I marvel then how thou dost do:

Dost thou get thy living amongst beggars, from door to door?

Indeed, Cousin Sincerity, I had thought thou wast not so poor.

SINCERITY.

Nay, Cousin Simplicity, I got my living hardly, but yet I hope just,

And with good conscience too, although I am restrained from my lust.

But this is it, Cousin Simplicity, I would request you to do for me,

Which is to get Lady Love and Lady Conscience' hand to a letter,

That by their means I may get some benefice, to make me live the better.

SIMPLICITY.

Yes ; I'll do so much for thee, cousin ; but hast thou any here ?

SINCERITY.

Ay, behold they are ready-drawn, if assigned ¹ they were.

[*Let SIMPLICITY make as though he read it, and look quite over ; meanwhile let CONSCIENCE enter.*]

SIMPLICITY.

Let me see, cousin, for I can read.

Mass, 'tis bravely done : didst thou it indeed ?

Mistress Conscience, I have a matter to bequest you to.

CONSCIENCE.

What is't ? I doubt not but 'tis some wise thing, if it be for you.

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, my cousin Sincerity wad desire to scribe these papers here,

That he may get some preferment, but I know not where.

CONSCIENCE.

Be these your letters ? what would you have me do, and how shall I call ye ?

SINCERITY.

Lady, my name is Sincerity.

¹ [Signed.]

CONSCIENCE.

And from whence come ye ?

SINCERITY.

I came from Oxford, but in Cambridge I studied
late ;¹

Having nothing, thought good, if I could, to make
better my state :

But if I had, instead of divinity, the law, astro-
nomy, astrology,

Physiognomy, palmestry, arithmetic, logic, music,
physic, or any such thing,

I had not doubted, then, but to have had some
better living.

But divines, that preach the word of God sincerely
and truly,

Are in these days little or nothing at all² set by.

God grant the good preachers be not taken away
for our unthankfulness !

✓ There never was more preaching and less follow-
ing, the people live so amiss.

But what is he that may not on the Sabbath-day
attend to hear God's word,

But he will rather run to bowls, sit at the alehouse,
than one hour afford,

Telling a tale of Robin Hood, sitting at cards,
playing at skittles,³ or some other vain thing,

That I fear God's vengeance on our heads it will
bring.

God grant amendment ! But, Lady Conscience, I
pray,

In my behalf unto Lucre do what ye may.

¹ *Studied late* is omitted in first 4°.

² *At all* is not in second 4°.

³ [Old copies, *botels*.]

SIMPLICITY.

Mass, my cousin can say his book well : I had not thought it.
He's worthy to have a benefice, and it will hit.

CONSCIENCE.

God be blessed, Sincerity, for the good comfort I have of thee :
I would it lay in us to pleasure such, believe me.
We will do what we can ; but *ultra posse non est esse*, you know :
It is Lucre that hath brought us poor souls so low ;
For we have sold our house, we are brought so poor,
And fear by her shortly to be shut out of door.
Yet to subscribe our name we will with all our heart :
Perchance for our sakes something she will impart.
Come hither, Simplicity ; let me write on thy back.

SIMPLICITY.

Here is the right picture of that fellow that sits in the corner.¹

Enter HOSPITALITY, while she is writing.

HOSPITALITY.

Lady, methinks you are busy.

¹ Possibly a personal allusion to somebody sitting "in the corner" of the theatre ; or it may have been to some well-known character of the time. Farther on, Simplicity alludes to some boy among the audience.

CONSCIENCE.

I have done, sir. I was setting my hand to a letter
to Lucre for our friend Sincerity.
But I would Lady Love were here too.

HOSPITALITY.

She is at home with me ; but, if it please, so much
in her behalf I will do.

CONSCIENCE.

I pray you¹ heartily, and it shall suffice the turn
well enou'.
Good Simplicity, once more thy body do bow.

SIMPLICITY.

I think I shall serve² to be a washing-block for you.
[*Aside.*
I would do it for you, but I am afraid yonder boy
will mock me.

HOSPITALITY.

No ; I warrant thee.

CONSCIENCE.

Here, take thy letters, Sincerity ; and I wish them
prosperous to thee.³

SINCERITY.

I yield you most hearty thanks, my good lady.

¹ [Not in edit. 1584.]

² [*I think youle make me serve*, edit. 1592.]

³ [*And prosperous be they to thee*, edit. 1592.]

HOSPITALITY.

Lady Conscience, pleaseth it you to walk home to dinner with me ?¹

CONSCIENCE.

I give you thanks,² my good friend Hospitality ;
But I pray, sir, have you invited to dinner any stranger ?

HOSPITALITY.

No, sure ; none but Lady Love, and three or four honest neighbours.

SIMPLICITY.

Mass, my lady is gotten to dinner already :
I believe she rose at ten o'clock, she is so hungry.
What, and I should come to dinner, hast thou any good cheer.

HOSPITALITY.

I have bread and beer, one joint of meat, and welcome, thy best fare.

SIMPLICITY.

Why, art thou call'd Hospitality, and hast no better cheer than that ?
I'll tell thee, if thou hast no more meat for so many, they'll ne'er be fat.
What, if my cousin—nay, I myself alone—to dinner should come,

¹ [*And dine with me*, edit. 1592.]

² [*Thanks*, edit. 1592, omitting *I give you*.]

Where should my lady and the rest dine, for I
 could eat up every crumb?
 Thou art an old miser: dost thou keep no better
 fare in thy house?
 Hast thou no great bag-pudding, nor hog's-face
 that is called souse?

HOSPITALITY.

My friend, hospitality doth not consist in great fare
 and banqueting,
 But in doing good unto the poor, and to yield them
 some refreshing;
 Therefore, thou and Sincerity will come and take
 part:
 Such as I have I'll give you with a free and willing
 heart. [*Exeunt* HOSPITALITY and CONSCIENCE.

SIMPLICITY.

He speaks well, cousin; let's go to dinner with him.
 The old man shall not think but we will pleasure
 him.
 Faith, he might have richer fellows than we to take
 his part,
 But he shall never have better eating fellows, if he
 would swelt his heart.
 Here be them that will eat with the proudest of
 them;
 I am sure my mother said I could eat so much as
 five men.
 Nay, I have a gift for eating, I tell ye,
 For our maids would never believe I put all the
 meat in my belly.
 But I have spied a knave, my Lady Lucre's coggling
 man.
 Give me your letters, cousin; I'll prefer ye, if I can.

Enter DISSIMULATION.

SINCERITY.

Dissimulation! out upon him! he shall be no
spokeman for me.

SIMPLICITY.

Why then you are a fool, Cousin Sincerity.
Give me 'em;¹ I tell ye, I know he'll do it for me.

SINCERITY.

Seeing thou wilt have it, here receive it; but yet
it grieves my heart
That this dissembling wretch should speak on my
part.

SIMPLICITY.

Hear ye, sir; I would request [you] to liver this
letter
To your good wholesome mistress, Lady Lucre.

DISSIMULATION.

Where hadst thou it, tell me?

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, of my Cousin Sincerity.

DISSIMULATION.

Why, I have nothing to do in it; 'tis not to me
thou shouldst come:

¹ [Old copies, *am.*]

I have not to do with Sincerity's matters : 'tis my fellow Simony's room.

SINCERITY.

Thou art akin to the lawyer ; thou wilt do nothing without a fee :
But thou, Fraud, Usury, nor yet Simony, shall do nothing for me.
And thou wilt do it, do it ; and thou wilt not, choose,
But thee and their dealing I hate and refuse.

DISSIMULATION.

Why, and I am not bound to thee so far as knave go,
And therefore, in despite of thee and thy cousin,
there thy letters be.
(What, thinkest thou by captious words to make me do it ?
Let them deliver your letters that hath a stomach to it.

SIMPLICITY.

Faith, cousin, he's such a testern¹ and proud,
'sembling knave,
That he'll do nothing, 'less some bribery he have.
There's a great many such promoting knaves, that gets their living
With nothing else but facing, lying, swearing, and flattering.
Why, he has a face like a black dog,² and blusheth like the back-side of a chimney.

¹ [Testy. Halliwell spells it *testorn*. Old copies, *testren*.]

² [Clarke, in his "*Paroemiologia*," 1639, has the proverb — "He blushes like a black dog."³]

'Twas not for nothing thy godfathers a cogging
 name gave thee. [Enter LADY LUCRE.
 But here comes his mistress Lady Lucre :
 Now, cousin, I'll 'liver your letter.
 Mistress Lady Lucre, here's a letter for ye.

LUCRE.

Hast thou a letter for me ?

SIMPLICITY.

Yes, by Saint Mary.
 How say you, cousin ? she reads your letter :
 And you can flatter, perhaps you shall speed
 better.

SINCERITY.

Thou speakest the truth, Simplicity ; for flatterers
 now-a-days
 Live gentlemen-like, and with prating get praise.

LUCRE.

Sir, I have read the tenure of your letter, wherein
 I find
 That at the request of Love and Conscience I should
 show myself kind
 In bestowing some spiritual living on ye, parsonage,
 or benefice :
 It seems it stands greatly in need, as appears by
 this.
 And, trust me, I would do for you ; but it lies not
 in me,

For I have referred all such matters to my servant
 Simony.
 You must speak to him, and if you can get his
 goodwill,
 Then be sure of mine their minds to fulfil.

SINCERITY.

Lady, I shall never get his goodwill, because I
 want ability,
 For he will do nothing, except I bring money.
 And if you grant it not, then, 'tis past all doubt,
 I shall be never the better, but go quite without.

DISSIMULATION.

Madam, I can tell you what you may give,
 Not hurting yourself, whereby he may live,
 And without my fellow Simony's consent,
 If to follow my mind you are any whit bent.

LUCRE.

Pray thee, what is it ? thou knowest, while for their
 house I am in bargaining,
 And it be never so little, I must seem to do some-
 thing.

DISSIMULATION.

Why, have you not the parsonage of St Nihil to
 bestow ?
 If you give him that, Simony shall never know.

LUCRE.

Indeed, thou sayest true. Draw near, Sincerity :
 Lo, for their sakes I will bestow frankly on thee.

I'll give thee the parsonage of Saint Nihil to
pleasure them withal,
And such another to it, if thou watch, till it fall.

SIMPLICITY.

My lady axes you, when you will take possession
of your house, and lend the rest of the money.

LUCRE.

What, are they so hasty? belike they spent it
merrily.

SIMPLICITY.

Faith, no; for they would eat it, if they could get
it, when they are a-hungry.

But you may be happy, for you have sped well to-
day :

[*Speaking to* SINCERITY.

You may thank God and good company that you
came this way.

The parsonage of St Michael's; by'r Lady, if you
have nothing else,

You shall be sure of a living, beside a good ring of
bells.

Cousin, I'll tell thee what thou shalt do: sell the
bells, and make money.

SINCERITY.

Thou mayest well be Simplicity, for thou showest
thy folly.

I have a parsonage, but what? of St Nihil; and
Nihil is nothing:

Then, where is the church, or any bells for to ring?

Thou understandest her not: she was set for to
flout.

I thought, coming in their names, I should go
without.

'Tis easy to see that Lucre loves not Love and Con-
science ;

| But God, I trust, will one day yield her just recom-
pense.

SIMPLICITY.

Cousin, you said that something to me you would
give,

When you had gotten preferment of Lucre to live,
And I trust you will remember your poor cousin
Simplicity :

You know to Lady Conscience and e'rybody I did
speak for you.

SINCERITY.

Good Simplicity, hold thy peace : my state is yet
nought.

I will help thee, sure, if ever I get ought.

But here comes Sir Nicholas Nemo : to him I will
go,

And see if for their sakes he will anything bestow.

Enter SIR NICHOLAS NEMO.

NEMO.

You come from Love and Conscience, as seemeth
me here,

My special good friends, whom I account of most
dear :

And you are called Sincerity ; your state shows the
same.

You are welcome to me for their sakes, and for
your own name ;

And for their sakes you shall see what I will do
 for you
 Without Dissimulation, Fraud, Usury, or Simony ;
 For they will do nothing without some kind of
 gain,
 Such cankered corruption in their hearts doth re-
 main.
 But come in to dinner with me, and when you have
 din'd,
 You shall have—— [Presently go out.

SINCERITY.

You shall have—but what ? a living that is blown
 down with the wind.

SIMPLICITY.

Now, cousin, dismember your friends, seeing two
 livings you have,
 One that this man promis'd, and another that Lady
 Lucre gave.
 Mass, you'll be a jolly man, and you had three or
 four more :
 Let's beg apace, cousin, and we shall get great
 store.
 Do thou get some more letters, and I'll get them
 scribed of Mistress Love and Conscience,
 And we'll go beg livings together ; we'll beg no
 small pence.
 How sayest thou, Cousin Sincerity ? wut do so mich ?
 If we can speak fair and 'semble, we shall be plaguy
 rich.

SINCERITY.

Good Simplicity, content thee : I am never the
 better for this,

But must of force leave off, for I see how vain it is.
It boots not Sincerity to sue for relief :
So few regard [me,] that to me is a grief.
This was Nicholas Nemo, and No-Man hath no
place :

Then how can I speed well in this heavy case ?
And no man bid me to dinner, when shall I dine ?
Or how shall I find him—where, when, and at
what time ?

Wherefore the relief I have had, and shall have, is
small ;

But to speak truth, the relief is nothing at all.
But come, Simplicity, let us go see what may be
had.

Sincerity in these days was, sure, born to be sad.

SIMPLICITY.

Come, let's go to dinner, cousin, for the gentleman,
I think, hath almost din'd,
But, and I do get victuals enough, I'll warrant
you, I will not be behind.

SINCERITY.

What, if thou canst not get it then, how wilt thou
eat ?

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, on this fashion ; with both hands at once ;
ye shall see, when I get meat.

SINCERITY.

Why, his name was Nemo, and Nemo hath no
being.

SIMPLICITY.

I believe, cousin, you be not hungry, that you stand prating.

Faith, I'll go do him a pleasure, because he hath need.

Why, and he will needs have meat eat, a' shall see how I'll feed.

I believe he will not bid me come again to him :

Mass, and he do, a' shall find a fellow that has his eating. *[Exeunt ambo.]*

Enter USURY and CONSCIENCE.

USURY.

Lady Conscience, is there anybody within your house, can you tell ?

CONSCIENCE.

There is nobody at all, be ye sure : I know certainly well.

USURY.

You know, when one comes to take possession of any piece of land,

There must not be one within, for against the order of law it doth stand.

Therefore I thought good to ask you; but I pray you think not amiss,

For both you and almost all others knows, that an old custom it is.

CONSCIENCE.

You say truth : take possession, when you please ; good leave I render ye.

Doubt you not ; there is neither man, woman, nor child, that will or shall hinder ye.¹

USURY.

Why, then, I will be bold to enter. [Exit.

CONSCIENCE.

Who is more bold than Usury to venter ?
 He maketh the matter dangerous, where is no need
 at all,
 But he thinks it not perilous to seek every man's
 fall.
 Both he and Lucre hath so pinch'd us, we know
 not what to do :
 Were it not for Hospitality, we knew not whither
 to go.
 Great is the misery that we poor ladies abide,
 And much more is the cruelty of Lucre and Usury
 beside,
 O Conscience, thou art not accounted of ; O Love,
 thou art little set by,
 For almost every one true love and pure conscience
 doth deny :
 So hath Lucre crept into the bosom of man, woman
 and child,
 That every one doth practise his dear friend to
 beguile.
 But God grant Hospitality be not by them over-
 prest,
 In whom all our stay and chiefest comfort doth
 rest :
 But Usury hates Hospitality, and cannot him
 abide,

¹ [Old copies, *you*.]

Because he for the poor and comfortless doth provide.

Here he comes that hath undone many an honest man,

And daily seeks to destroy, deface, and bring to ruin, if he can—

Now, sir, have you taken possession, as your dear lady will'd you?

Enter USURY.

USURY.

I have done it, and I think you have received your money.

But this to you : my lady will'd me to bid you provide some other house out of hand,

For she would not by her will have Love and Conscience to dwell in her land.

Therefore I would wish you to provide ye ;

So ye should save charges, for a less house may serve ye.

CONSCIENCE.

I pray you heartily, let us stay there, and we will be content

To give you ten pound a year, which is the old rent.

USURY.

Ten pound a year ! that were a stale jest,

If I should take the old rent to follow your request.

Nay, after forty pound a year you shall have it for a quarter,

And you may think, too, I greatly befriended ye in this matter :

But no longer than for a quarter to you I'll set it,

For perhaps my lady shall sell it, or else to some other will let it.

CONSCIENCE.

Well, sith we are driven to this hard and bitter drift,
We accept it, and are contented to make bare and hard shift.

USURY.

Then, get you gone, and see at a day your rent be ready.

CONSCIENCE.

We must have patience perforce, seeing there is no remedy. *[Exit CONSCIENCE.]*

USURY.

What a fool was I ! it repents me I have let it so reasonable.
I might so well have had after threescore as such a trifle ;
For, seeing they were distressed, they would have given largely.
I was a right sot ; but I'll be overseen no more, believe me.

Enter MERCATORE.

MERCATORE.

Ah, my good a friend Master Usury ! by my trot', you be very well-met.
Me be much beholden unto you for your goodwill ; me be in your debt.

But a me take a your part so much against a scald
old churl, call'd Hospitality,
Did speak against you, and says you bring good
honest men to beggary.

USURY.

I thank you, sir. Did he speak such evil of me,
as you now say?
I doubt not but to reward him for his treachery
one day.

MERCATORE.

But, I pray, tell a me how fare a my lady all dis
while?

USURY.

Marry, very well,¹ sir; and here she comes, if my-
self I do not beguile.

Enter LUCRE.

LUCRE.

What, Signor Mercatore! I have not seen you
many a day:
I marvel what is the cause you kept so long away.

MERCATORE.

Shall me say you, Madonna, dat me have had
much business for you in hand,
For send away good commodities out of dis little
country England:

¹ [Edit. 1584 has *very*, and second 4^o *well*, the true reading.
as Mr Collier suggests, being that now given in the text.]

Me have now sent over brass, copper, pewter, and
many oder ting,
And for dat me shall ha for gentlewomans fine
trifles, that great profit will bring.

LUCRE.

I perceive you have been mindful of me, for which
I thank ye.
But, Usury, tell me, how have you sped in that
you went about?

USURY.

Indifferently, lady, you need not to doubt.
I have taken possession, and because they were
destitute,
I have let it for a quarter; my tale to conclude,
Marry, I have a little raised the rent, but it is but
forty pound by the year;
But if it were to let now, I would let it more dear.

LUCRE.

Indeed, 'tis but a trifle; it makes no matter:
I force not greatly, being but for a quarter.

MERCATORE.

Madonna, me tell ye vat you shall do; let dem to
stranger, dat are content
To dwell in a little room, and to pay much rent:
For you know da Frenchmans and Flemings in dis
country be many,
So dat they make shift to dwell ten houses in one
very gladly;

VOL. VI.

U

And be content a for pay fifty or threescore pound
a year
For dat which da Englishmans say twenty mark is
too dear.

LUCRE.

Why, Signor Mercatore, think you not that I
Have infinite numbers in London that my want
doth supply ?
Beside in Bristow, Northampton, Norwich, West-
chester, Canterbury,
Dover, Sandwich, Rye, Porchmouth, Plymouth,
and many mo,
That great rents upon little room do bestow ?
Yes, I warrant you ; and truly I may thank the
strangers for this,
That they have made houses so dear, whereby I
live in bliss.
But, Signor Mercatore, dare you to travel under-
take,
And go amongst the Moors, Turks and Pagans for
my sake ?

MERCATORE.

Madonna, me dare go to de Turks, Moors, Pagans,
and more too :
What do me care, and me go to da great devil for
you ?
Command a me, madam, and you shall see plain,
Dat a for your sake me refuse a no pain.

LUCRE.

Then, Signor Mercatore, I am forthwith to send ye,
From hence to search for some new toys in Bar-
bary and in Turkey ;
Such trifles as you think will please wantons best,

For you know in this country 'tis their chiefest request.

MERCATORE.

Indeed, de gentlewomans here buy so much vain toys,
Dat we strangers laugh a to tink wherein day have their joys.
Fait', Madonna, me will search all da strange countries me can tell,
But me will have sush tings dat please dese gentlewomans vell.

LUCRE.

Why, then, let us provide things ready to haste you away.

MERCATORE.

A vostro commandamento, Madonna, me obey.
[*Exeunt.*]

Enter SIMONY and PETER PLEASEMAN,
*like a parson.*¹

SIMONY.

Now proceed with your tale, and I'll hear thee.

PETER.

And so, sir, as I was about to tell you,
This same Presco and this same Cracko be both my parishioners now ;
And, sir, they fell out marvellously together about you :

¹ [*Priest*, edit. 1592.]

This same Cracko took your part, and said that
the clergy
Was upholden by you, and maintained very
worshipfully.
So, sir, Presco he would not grant that in no case,
But said that you did corrupt the clergy, and dis-
honour that holy place.
Now, sir, I was weary to hear them at such great
strife,
For I love to please men, so long as I have life :
Therefore I beseech your mastership to speak to
Lady Lucre,
That I may be her chaplain, or else to serve her.

SIMONY.

What is your name ?

PETER.

Sir Peter.

SIMONY.

What more ?

PETER.

Forsooth, Pleaseman.

SIMONY.

Then, your name is Sir Peter Pleaseman ?

PETER.

Ay, forsooth.

SIMONY.

And please-woman too, now and then ?

PETER.

You know that *homo* is indifferent.¹

SIMONY.

Now, surely, a good scholar in my judgment !
I pray, at what university were ye ?

PETER.

Of no university, truly. Marry, I have gone
To school in a college, where I have studied two or
three places of divinity.
And all for Lady Lucre's sake, sir, you may stead-
fastly believe me.

SIMONY.

Nay, I believe ye. But of what religion are you,
can ye tell ?

PETER.

Marry, sir, of all religions : I know not myself very
well.

SIMONY.

You are a Protestant now, and I think to that you
will grant ?

PETER.

Indeed I have been a Catholic : marry, now for the
most part, a Protestant.
But, and if my service may please her—hark in
your ear, sir—
I warrant you my religion shall not offend her.

¹ [*Neuter.*] *common* ?

Common

SIMONY.

You say well ; but if I help you to such great preferment,
 Would you be willing that for my pain
 I shall have yearly half the gain ?
 For it is reason, you know, that if I help you to a living,
 That you should unto me be somewhat beholding.

PETER.

Ay, sir ; and reason good ; I'll be as your master-ship please :
 I care not what you do, so I may live at ease.

SIMONY.

Then, this man is answered. Sir Peter Pleaseman,
 come in with me,
 And I'll prefer you straightway to my lady.

PETER.

O sir, I thank ye. [*Exeunt.*]

Enter SIMPLICITY, with a basket on his arm.

SIMPLICITY.

You think I am going to market to buy roast meat,
 do ye not ?
 I thought so ; but you are deceived, for I wot what
 I wot.
 I am neither going to the butcher's to buy veal,
 mutton, or beef,
 But I am going to a bloodsucker ; and who is it ?
 faith, Usury, that thief.

Why, sirs, 'twas no marcle¹ he undid my father,
that was called Plain-Dealing,
When he has undone my lady and Conscience too
with his usuring.
I'll tell ye, sirs, trust him not, for he'll flatter
bonfacion² and sore,
Till he has gotten the baker vantage; then he'll
turn you out of door.

Enter DISSIMULATION.

DISSIMULATION.

Simplicity, now of my honesty, very heartily well-
met.

SIMPLICITY.

What, Semblation, swear not ; for thou swearest
by that thou couldst not get.
Thou have honesty now ? thy honesty is quite gone :
Marry, thou hadst honesty at eleven of the clock,
and went from you at noon.
Why, how canst thou have honesty, when it dare
not come nigh thee ?
I warrant, Semblation, he that has less honesty
than thou may defy thee.
Thou hast honesty, sir reverence ! come out, dog,
where art thou ?
Even as much^s honesty as had my mother's great
hoggish sow.
No, faith, thou must put out my eye with honesty,
and thou hadst it here :
Hast not left it at the alehouse in gage for a pot
of strong beer ?

¹ [Miracle.] ² [i.e., in good style.]
³ [Edit. 1584 has *must.*]

DISSIMULATION.

Pray thee, leave prating, Simplicity, and tell me
what thou hast there.

SIMPLICITY.

Why, 'tis nothing for thee: thou dost not deal
with such kind of ware.
Sirrah, there is no deceit in a bag-pudding, is there?
nor in a plain pudding-pie?
But there is deceit, and knavery too, in thy fellow
that is called Usury.¹
Sirrah, I'll tell thee; I won² not tell thee; and
yet I'll tell thee, now I 'member me, too.
Canst tell, or wouldst know whither with this par-
liament I go?³
Faith, even to Suck-Swill, thy fellow Usury, I am
sent
With my Lady Love's gown, and Lady Conscience'
too, for a quarter's rent.

DISSIMULATION.

Alas! poor Lady Love, art thou driven so low?
Some little pittance on thee I'll bestow.

¹ This line is omitted in edit. 1592.

² [Will.]

³ For *parliament* we are to understand *parament*, i.e., apparel, referring to the gowns he carries. Beaumont and Fletcher use the word *paramentos*—

“There were cloaks, gowns, cassocks,
And other *paramentos*,”

—“Love's Pilgrimage,” edit. Dyce, xi. 226. *Paramento* is Spanish, and means ornament, embellishment, or sometimes any kind of covering.

Hold, Simplicity : carry her three or four ducats
from me,
And commend me to her even very heartily.

SIMPLICITY.

Duck-eggs ? yes, I'll carry 'em, and 'twere as many
as this would hold.

DISSIMULATION.

Tush ! thou knowest not what I mean : take this,
'tis gold.

SIMPLICITY.

Mass, 'tis gold indeed : why, wilt thou send away
thy gold ? hast no more need ?
I think thou art grown plaguy rich with thy dis-
sembling trade.
But I'll carry my lady the gold, for this will make
her well apaid.

DISSIMULATION.

! And, sirrah, carry Lady Love's gown back again ;
for my fellow Usury
Shall not have her gown : I am sure so much he
will befriend me.

SIMPLICITY.

But what shall Conscience' gown do ? shall I carry
it back again too ?

DISSIMULATION.

! Nay, let Conscience' gown and skin to Usury go.
If nobody cared for Conscience more than I,

They would hang her up like bacon in a chimney
to dry.

SIMPLICITY.

Faith, I told thee thou caredst not for Conscience
nor honesty :
I think, indeed, it will never be the death of thee.
But I'll go conspach my errand so soon as I can,
I tell ye,
For now I ha' gold, I would fain have some good
meat in my belly. [Exit.

DISSIMULATION.

Nay, I'll hie me after, that I may send back Lady
Love's gown,
For I would not have Love bought quite out of
town.
Marry, for Conscience, tut, I care not two straws :
Why I should take care for her, I know no kind
of cause. [Exit.

Enter HOSPITALITY.

HOSPITALITY.

O, what shall I say ! Usury hath undone me, and
now he hates me to the death,
And seeks by all means possible for to bereave me
of breath.
I cannot rest in any place, but he hunts and follows
me everywhere,
That I know no place to abide, I live so much in
fear.
But, out alas ! here comes he that will shorten my
days.

Enter USURY.

USURY.

O, have I caught your old grey beard ? you be the
man whom the people so praise :

You are a frank gentleman, and full of liberality.

Why, who had all the praise in London or Eng-
land, but Master Hospitality ?

But I'll master you now, I'll hold you a groat.

HOSPITALITY.

What, will you kill me ?

USURY.

No ; I'll do nothing but cut thy throat.

HOSPITALITY.

O help, help, help for God's sake !

Enter CONSCIENCE, running apace.

CONSCIENCE.

What lamentable cry was that I heard one make ?

HOSPITALITY.

O Lady Conscience ! now or never help me.

CONSCIENCE.

Why, what wilt thou do with him, Usury ?

USURY.

What will I do with him ? marry, cut his throat,
and then no more.

CONSCIENCE.

O, dost thou not consider, that thou shalt dearly
answer
For Hospitality, that good member ? refrain it
therefore.

USURY.

Refrain me no refraining, nor answer me no
answering :
The matter is answered well enough in this thing.

CONSCIENCE.

For God's sake, spare him ! for country-sake, spare
him ; for pity-sake, spare him ;
For love-sake, spare him ; for Conscience-sake,
forbear him !

USURY.

Let country, pity, love, Conscience, and all go in
respect of myself,
He shall die. Come, ye feeble wretch, I'll dress
ye like an elf.

CONSCIENCE.

But yet, Usury, consider the lamentable cry of the
poor :
For lack of Hospitality fatherless children are
turned out of door.
Consider again the complaint of the sick, blind, and
lame,

That will cry unto the Lord for vengeance on thy
head in his name.
Is the fear of God so far from thee that thou hast
no feeling at all?
O, repent, Usury! leave Hospitality, and for mercy
at the Lord's hand call.

USURY.

Leave prating, Conscience: thou canst not mollify
my heart.
He shall, in spite of thee and all other, feel his
deadly smart.
Yet I'll not commit the murder openly,
But hale the villain into a corner, and so kill him
secretly.
Come, ye miserable drudge, and receive thy death.

HOSPITALITY.

Help, good lady, help! he will stop my breath.

CONSCIENCE.

(Alas! I would help thee, but I have not the power.

HOSPITALITY.

Farewell, Lady Conscience: you shall have Hos-
pitality in London nor England no more.
[Hale him in.¹

CONSCIENCE.

O help! help, help, some good body!

¹ [In the old copies this direction is inserted wrongly six
lines higher up.]

Enter DISSIMULATION and SIMPLICITY hastily.

DISSIMULATION.

Who is that calls for help so lustily ? ¹

CONSCIENCE.

Out, alas ! thy fellow Usury hath killed Hospitality.

SIMPLICITY.

Now, God's blessing on his heart : why, 'twas time
that he was dead :

He was an old churl, with never a good tooth in
his head.

And he ne'er kept no good cheer that I could see ;
For if one had not come at dinner-time, he should
have gone away hungry.

I could never get my belly-full of meat ;
He had nothing but beef, bread, and cheese for me
to eat.

Now I would have had some pies, or bag-puddings
with great lumps of fat ;

But, I warrant ye,² he did keep my mouth well
enough from that.

Faith, and he be dead, he is dead : let him go to
the devil, and he will ;

Or if he will not go thither, let him even lie there
still.

I'll ne'er make wamentation for an old churl,
For he has been a great while, and now 'tis time
that he were out of the worl'.

¹ [Old copies, *hastily*, the compositor's eye having perhaps caught the word from the stage-direction just above.]

² [These three words are not in second 4°.]

Enter LUCRE.

LUCRE.

What, Conscience, thou look'st like a poor pigeon,
pull'd of late.

CONSCIENCE.

What, Lucre, thou lookest like a whore, full of
deadly hate.

LUCRE.

Alas ! Lucre, I am sorry for thee, but I cannot
weep.¹

CONSCIENCE.

Alas ! Lucre, I am sorry for thee that thou canst
no honesty keep :

But such as thou art, such are the² attenders on
thee,

As appears by thy servant Usury, that hath killed
that good member Hospitality.

SIMPLICITY.

Faith, Hospitality is killed, and hath made his
will,

And hath given Dissimulation three trees upon an
high hill.

LUCRE.

Come hither, Dissimulation, and hie you hence, so
fast as you may,

¹ [A proverbial expression. See Hazlitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 210. So, in the "Spanish Tragedy," vol. v. p. 84 : "I am in a sort sorry for thee ; but if I should be hang'd with thee, I cannot weep."]
² [Old copies, *thy*.]

And help thy fellow Usury to convey himself out
 of the way :
 Further will the justices, if they chance to see him,
 not to know him,
 Or know[ing] him, not by any means to hinder
 him ;
 And they shall command thrice so much at my
 hand.
 Go trudge, run, out, away : how ! dost thou stand !

DISSIMULATION.

Nay, good lady, send my fellow Simony ;
 For I have an earnest suit to ye.

LUCRE.

Then, Simony, go, do what I have will'd.

SIMONY.

I run, Madam : your mind shall be fulfill'd. *[Exit.*

CONSCIENCE.

Well, well, Lucre, *Audeo et taceo* : I see and say
 nothing ;
 But I fear the plague of God on thy head it will
 bring.

DISSIMULATION.

Good lady, grant that love be your waiting-maid.
 For I think, being brought so low, she will be well
 apaid.

LUCRE.

Speakest thou in good earnest, or dost thou but
dissemble ?
I know not how to have thee, thou art so variable.

DISSIMULATION.

Lady, though my name be Dissimulation, yet I
speak *bona fide* now.
If it please you my petitions to allow.

Enter SIMONY.

LUCRE.

Stand by : I'll answer thee anon. What news,
Simony,
Bringest thou of thy fellow Usury ?

SIMONY.

Marry, madam, good news ; for Usury lies close,
Hid in a rich man's house, that will not let him
loose,
Until they see the matter brought to a good end ;
For Usury in this country hath many a good friend :
And late I saw Hospitality carried to burying.

LUCRE.

I pray thee, tell me who were they that followed
him ?

SIMONY.

There were many of the clergy, and many of the
nobility,
And many right worshipful rich citizens,

VOL. VI.

X

Substantial graziers,¹ and very wealthy farmers :
 But to see how the poor followed him, it was a
 wonder ;
 Never yet at any burial I have seen such a number.

LUCRE.

But what say the people of the murder ?

SIMONY.

Many are sorry, and say 'tis great pity that he was
 slain.
 But who be they ? the poor beggarly people that
 so complain.
 As for the other, they say 'twas a cruel, bloody
 fact,
 But I perceive none will hinder the murderer for
 this cruel act.

LUCRE.

'Tis well : I am glad of it. Now, Dissimulation, if
 you can get Love's good-will,
 I am contented with all my heart to grant there-
 until.

DISSIMULATION.

I thank you, good lady, and I doubt not but she
 With a little entreaty will thereto agree.

SIMPLICITY.

Now I have it in my breeches, and very well can tell,
 That I and my lady with Mistress Lucre shall
 dwell ;

¹ Mr Collier's suggestion ; both the old copies, *gracious*.

But if I be her serving-fellow, and dwell there,
 I must learn to cog, lie, foist, and swear ;
 And surely I shall never learn : marry, and 'twere
 to lie abed all day,
 I know to that kind of living I should give a good
 'ssay : ¹
 Or if 'twere to eat one's meat, then I knew what I
 had to do.
 How say ye, sirrah, can I not ? I'll be judg'd ² by
 you.

LUCRE.

Now to you, little mouse : did I not tell you before,
 That I should, ere 'twere long, turn you both out
 of door ?
 How say you, pretty soul, is't come to pass, yea or
 no ?
 I think I have pull'd your peacock's plumes some-
 what low.
 And yet you be so stout as though you felt no
 grief ;
 But I know, ere it be long, you will come puling
 to me for relief.

CONSCIENCE.

Well, Lucre, well : you know pride will have a fall.
 What advantageth ³ it thee to win the world, and
 lose thy soul withal ?
 Yet better it is to live with little, and keep a con-
 science clear,
 Which is to God a sacrifice, and accounted of most
 dear.

¹ [The first 4^o has *can* for *should*, and *say* for *'ssay* or *essay*. The second 4^o reads *lying* for *living*.]

² [Old copy, *drudge*.]

³ Edit. 1592 has *availeth*. See St Matthew xvi. 26.

LUCRE.

Nay, Conscience, and you be bookish, I mean to
 leave ye ;
 And the cold ground to comfort your feet I be-
 queath ye ;
 Methink, you being so deeply learned may do well
 to keep a school.
 Why, I have seen so cunning a clerk in time to
 prove a fool. [*Exeunt* LUCRE and SIMONY.]

SIMPLICITY.

Sirrah, if thou shouldst marry my lady, thou
 wouldst keep her brave,
 For I think now thou art a plaguy rich knave.

DISSIMULATION.

Rich I am, but as for knave, keep [that] to thyself.
 Come, give me my lady's gown, thou ass-headed
 elf.

SIMPLICITY.

Why, I'll go with thee, for I must dwell with my
 lady.

DISSIMULATION.

Pack hence away, [or] Jack Drum's entertain-
 ment : ¹ she will none of thee. [*Exit.*]

¹ [A synonym for a drubbing.] See "All's Well that Ends Well," act iii. sc. 6, when this passage is quoted in illustration of "John Drum's entertainment," as it is called by Shakespeare. The expression was equivalent to *drumming out*.

SIMPLICITY.

This is as my cousin and I went to Master Nemo's house :

There was nobody to bid a dog drink, or to change a man a louse.

But Lady Conscience—nay, who there?—scratch that name away!

Can she be a lady that is turned out of all her beray?¹

Do not be call'd more lady, and if you be wise,
For everybody will mock you, and say you be not
worth two butterflies.

CONSCIENCE.

What remedy, Simplicity? I cannot do withal.
But what shall we go do? or whereto shall we fall?

SIMPLICITY.

Why, to our victuals: I know nothing else we have to do!

And mark, if I cannot eat twenty times as much as you.

CONSCIENCE.

If I go lie in an inn, I shall be sore grieved to see
The deceit of the ostler, the polling of the tapster,
as in most houses of lodging they be.

If in a brewer's house, at the over-plenty of water
and the scarceness of malt I should grieve,

Whereby to enrich themselves all other with un-
savoury thin drink they deceive:

If in a tanner's house, with his great deceit in
tanning;

¹ [Second 4° has *array*. Mr Collier thinks *beray* was intended by the writer as a blunder on the part of the clown.]

If in a weaver's house, with his great cosening in weaving.

If in a baker's house, with light bread and very evil working ;

If in a chandler's, with deceitful weights, false measures, selling for a halfpenny that is scant worth a farthing ;

And if in an alehouse, with the great resort of poor unthrifths, that with swearing at the cards consume their lives,

Having greater delight to spend a shilling that way, than a groat at home to sustain their needy children and wives.

For which I judge it best for me to get some solitary place,

Where I may with patience this my heavy cross embrace,

And learn to sell ¹ broom, whereby to get my living,

Using that as a quiet mean to keep myself from begging.

Wherefore, Simplicity, if thou wilt do the like,
Settle thyself to it, and with true labour thy living do seek. [Exit CONSCIENCE.]

SIMPLICITY.

No, faith, Mistress Conscience, I'll not ; for, and I should sell ¹ broom,

The maids would cosen me to competually with their old shoon.

And, too, I cannot work, and you would hang me out of the way ;

For when I was a miller, Will did grind the meal, while I did play.

¹ [First 4°, *seeke*.]

Therefore I'll have as easy an occupation as I had
 when my father was alive.
 Faith, I'll go even a-begging: why, 'tis a good
 trade; a man shall be sure to thrive;
 For I am sure my prayers will get bread and
 cheese, and my singing will get me drink.
 Then shall not I do better than Mistress Con-
 science? tell me as you think.
 Therefore god Pan in the kitchen, and god Pot in
 the buttery,
 Come and resist me, that I may sing with the more
 meliosity.
 But, sirs, mark my cauled countenance, when I
 begin.
 But yonder is a fellow¹ that gapes to bite me, or
 else to eat that which I sing.
 Why, thou art a fool; canst thou not keep thy
 mouth strait together?
 And when it comes, snap at it, as my father's dog
 would do at a liver.
 But thou art so greedy,
 That thou thinkest to eat it before it comes nigh
 thee.

SIMPLICITY sings.

*(Simplicity sings it, and 'sperience doth prove,
 No biding in London for Conscience and Love.
 The country hath no peer,
 Where Conscience comes not once a year;
 And Love so welcome to every town,
 As wind that blows the houses down.
 Sing down adown, down, down, down.
 Simplicity sings it, and 'sperience doth prove,
 No dwelling in London, no biding in London, for
 Conscience and Love.*

¹ [The clown is addressing one of the audience.]

SIMPLICITY.

Now, sirrah, hast eaten up my song ? and ye have,
ye shall eat no more to-day,
For everybody may see your belly is grown bigger
with eating up our play.
He has fill'd his belly, but I am never a whit the
better,
Therefore I'll go seek some victuals ; and 'member,
for eating up my song you shall be my debtor.
[*Exit* SIMPLICITY.]

Enter MERCATORE, the Merchant, and GERONTUS,
a Jew.

GERONTUS.

But, Signor Mercatore, tell me, did ye serve me
well or no,
That having gotten my money would seem the
country to forego ?
You know I lent you two thousand ducats for
three months' space,
And, ere the time came, you got another thousand
by flattery and thy smooth face.
So, when the time came that I should have re-
ceived my money,
You were not to be found, but was fled out of the
country.
Surely, if we that be Jews should deal so one with
another,
We should not be trusted again of our own
brother ;
But many of you Christians make no conscience to
falsify your faith, and break your day.

I should have been paid at three¹ months' end,
and now it is two years you have been away.
Well, I am glad you be come again to Turkey;
now I trust I shall receive the interest of you,
so well as the principal.

MERCATORE.

Ah, good Master Geronto! pray heartily, bear a me
a little while,
And me shall pay ye all without any deceit or
guile:
Me have much business for my pretty knacks to
send to England.
Good sir, bear a me for five days, me'll despatch
your money out of hand.²

GERONTUS.

Signor Mercatore, I know no reason why because
you have dealt with me so ill:
Sure, you did it not for need, but of set purpose
and will;
And, I tell ye,³ to bear with ye four or five days
goes sore against my mind,
Lest you should steal away, and forget to leave
my money behind.

MERCATORE.

Pray heartily, do tink a no such ting, my good
friend, a me.
Be my trot' and fait', me pay you all, every penny.

¹ [Edit. 1584, *the*.]

² [This word is omitted in first 4°.]

³ [*I tell ye*, not in edit. 1692.]

GERONTUS.

Well, I'll take your faith and troth once more, and
trust to your honesty,
In hope that for my long tarrying you will deal
well with me.
Tell me what ware you would buy for England,
such necessaries as they lack?¹

MERCATORE.

O no, lack some pretty fine toy, or some fantastic
new knack ;
For da gentlewomans in England buy much tings
for fantasy.
You pleasure a me, sir, vat me mean a dere buy?

GERONTUS.

I understand you, sir : but keep touch with me,
and I'll bring you to great store,
Such as I perceive you came to this country for ;
As musk, amber, sweet powders, fine odours, pleasant
perfumes, and many such toys,
Wherein I perceive consisteth that country gentle-
women's joys.
Besides, I have diamonds, rubies, emerands, sap-
phires, smaradines, opals, onacles, jacinths,
agates, turquoise, and almost of all kind of
precious stones,
And many mo fit things to suck away money
from such green-headed wantons.

¹ [*Tell me what good ware for England you do lacke*, edit.
1592.]

MERCATORE.

Faith-a, my good friend, me tank you most heartly
alway.

Me shall a content your debt within this two or
tree day.

GERONTUS.

Well, look you do keep your promise, and another
time you shall command me.

Come, go we home, where our commodities you
may at pleasure see. [Exeunt.

*Enter CONSCIENCE, with brooms at her back,
singing as followeth :*

*New brooms,¹ green brooms, will you buy any ?
Come, maidens, come quickly, let me take a penny.*

*My brooms are not steeped,
But very well-bound :
My brooms be not crooked,
But smooth-cut and round.
I wish it should please you
To buy of my broom,
Then would it well ease me,
If market were done.*

*Have you any old boots,
Or any old shoon ;
Pouch-rings or buskins
To cope for new broom ?*

¹ According to "Extracts from the Stationers' Registers," i. 88, William Griffith was licensed in 1568-4 to print a ballad entitled "Buy, Broomes, buye." This may be the song here sung by Conscience. A song to the tune is inserted in the tract of "Robin Goodfellow," 1628, 4°, but no doubt first published many years earlier.

*If so you have, maidens,
I pray you bring hither,
That you and I friendly
May bargain together.*

*New brooms, green brooms, will you buy any?
Come, maidens, come quickly, let me take a penny.*

CONSCIENCE *speaketh*.

- ✓ Thus am I driven to make a virtue of necessity ;
And, seeing God almighty will have it so, I
embrace it thankfully,
Desiring God to mollify and lessen ¹ Usury's hard
heart,
That the poor people feel not the like penury and
smart.
| But Usury is made tolerable amongst Christians,
as a necessary thing,
So that, going beyond the limits of our law, they
extort, and many to misery bring.
• But if we should follow God's law, we should not
receive above that we lend ;
For if we lend for reward, how can we say we are
our neighbours' friend ?
O, how blessed shall that man be, that lends
without abuse,
But thrice accursed shall he be, that greatly covets
use ;
For he that covets over-much, insatiate is his mind,
So that to perjury and cruelty he wholly is
inclin'd :
Wherewith they sore oppress the poor by divers
sundry ways,

¹ [So both the 4th, but Mr Collier suggests *soften*.]

Which makes them cry unto the Lord to shorten
cutthroats' days.

Paul calleth them thieves that doth not give the
needy of their store,

And thrice accurs'd are they that take one penny
from the poor.

But while I stand reasoning thus, I forget my
market clean ;

And sith God hath ordained this way, I am to use
the mean.

Sing again.

*Have ye any old shoes, or have ye any boots ? have ye
any buskins, or will ye buy any broom ?*

*Who bargains or chops with Conscience ? What,
will no customer come ?*

Enter USURY.

USURY.

Who is it that cries brooms ? What, Conscience,
selling brooms about the street ?

CONSCIENCE.

What, Usury, it is great pity thou art unhanged yet.

USURY.

Believe me, Conscience, it grieves me thou art
brought so low.

CONSCIENCE.

Believe me, Usury, it grieves me thou wast not
hanged long ago ;

334 THE THREE LADIES OF LONDON.

For if thou hadst been hanged, before thou slewest
Hospitality,
Thou hadst not made me and thousands more to
feel like poverty.

Enter LUCRE.

LUCRE.

Methought I heard one cry brooms along the door.

USURY.

Ay, marry, madam ; it was Conscience, who seems
to be offended at me very sore.

LUCRE.

Alas, Conscience ! art thou become a poor broom-
wife ?

CONSCIENCE.

Alas, Lucre ! wilt thou continue a harlot all [the]
days of thy life ?

LUCRE.

Alas ! I think it is a grief to thee that thou art so
poor.

CONSCIENCE.

Alas, Lucre ! I think it is no pain to thee, that
thou still playest the whore.

LUCRE.

Well, well, Conscience, that sharp tongue of thine
hath not been thy furtherance :

If thou hadst kept thy tongue, thou hadst kept thy
friend, and not have had such hindrance.
But wottest thou who shall be married to-morrow?
Love with my Dissimulation ;
For, I think, to bid the guests they are by this
time wellnigh gone ;
And having occasion to buy brooms, I care not if
I buy them all.

CONSCIENCE.

Then, give me a shilling, and with a goodwill have
them you shall.

LUCRE.

Usury, carry in these brooms, and give them to the
maid,
For I know of such store she will be well apaid.
[Exit USURY with the brooms.
Hold, Conscience ; though thy brooms be not worth
a quarter so much,
Yet to give thee a piece of gold I do it not grutch ;
And if thou wouldst follow my mind, thou shouldst
not live in such sort,
But pass thy days with pleasure, store of every
kind of sport.

CONSCIENCE.

I think you lead the world in a string, for every-
body follows you :
And sith every one doth it, why may not I do it
too ?
For that I see your free heart and great liberality,
I marvel not that all people are so willing to fol-
low ye.

LUCRE.

Then, sweet soul, mark what I would have thee
do for me.
That is, to deck up thy poor cottage hand-
somely;
And for that purpose I have five thousand crowns
in store,
And when it is spent, thou shalt have twice as
much more.
But only see thy rooms be neat, when I shall thither
resort,
With familiar friends to play, and¹ pass the time
in sport;
For the deputy, constable and spiteful neighbours
do spy, pry, and eye about my house,
That I dare not be once merry within, but still
mute like a mouse.

CONSCIENCE.

My good Lady Lucre, I will fulfil your mind in
every kind of thing,
So that you shall be welcome at all hours, whom-
soever you do bring:
And all the dogs in the town shall not bark at
your doings, I trow;
For your full pretence and intent I do thoroughly
know,
Even so well as if you had opened the very secrets
of your heart,
For which I doubt not but to rest in your favour
by my desert.
But here comes your man, Usury.

¹ [*Play, and are not in the second 4°.*]

Enter USURY.

LUCRE.

I'll send him home for the money—Usury, step in,
And bring me the box of all abomination, that
stands in the window :
It is little and round, painted with divers colours,
and is pretty to the show.

USURY.

Madam, is there any superscription thereon ?

LUCRE.

Have I not told you the name ? for shame ; get
you gone. [*Exit USURY.*]
Well, my wench, I doubt not but our pleasures
shall excel,
Seeing thou hast got a corner fit, where few neigh-
bours dwell,
And they be of the poorest sort, which fits our turn
so right,
Because they dare not speak against our sports and
sweet delight :
And if they should, alas ! their words would nought
at all be weigh'd,
And for to speak before my face they will be all
afraid.

Enter USURY, with a painted box of ink in his hand.

USURY.

Madam, I deem this same to be it, so far as I can
guess.

VOL. VI.

Y

LUCRE.

Thou sayest the truth ; 'tis it indeed : the outside
 shows no less,
 But, Usury, I think Dissimulation hath not seen
 you since your coming home ;
 Therefore go see him : he will rejoice, when to him
 you are shown.
 It is a busy time with him : help to further him,
 if you can.

USURY.

You may command me to attend at board to be
 his man. [Exit USURY.]

*Here let LUCRE open the box, and dip her finger in it,
 and spot CONSCIENCE' face, saying as followeth.*

LUCRE.

Hold here, my sweet ; and then over to see if any
 want.
 The more I do behold this face, the more my mind
 doth vaunt.
 This face is of favour, these cheeks are reddy and
 white ;
 These lips are cherry-red, and full of deep delight :
 Quick-rolling eyes, her temples high, and forehead
 white as snow ;
 Her eyebrows seemly set in frame, with dimpled
 chin below.
 O, how beauty hath adorned thee with every seemly
 hue,
 In limbs, in looks, with all the rest proportion
 keeping due.
 Sure, I have not seen a finer soul in every kind of
 part :

I cannot choose but kiss thee with my lips, that
love thee with my heart.

CONSCIENCE.

I have told the crowns, and here are just so many
as you to me did say.

LUCRE.

Then, when thou wilt, thou may'st depart, and
homewards take thy way.
And I pray thee, make haste in decking of thy
room,
That I may find thy lodging fine, when with my
friend I come.

CONSCIENCE.

I'll make speed ; and where I have with brooms
ofttimes been roaming,
I mean henceforth not to be seen, but sit to watch
your coming. [Exit CONSCIENCE.]

LUCRE.

O, how joyful may I be that such success do find !
No marvel, for poverty and desire of Lucre do force
them follow my mind.
Now may I rejoice in full contentation,
(That shall marry Love with Dissimulation :
And I have spotted Conscience with all abhomin-
ation.
But I forget myself, for I must to the wedding,
Both vauntingly and flauntingly, although I had
no bidding. [Exit LUCRE.]

*Enter DISSIMULATION and COGGING his man,
and SIMONY.*

COGGING.

Sir, although you be my master, I would not have
you to upbraid my name,
But I would have you use the right skill and title
of the same :
For my name is neither scogging¹ nor scragging,
but ancient Cogging.
Sir, my ancestors were five of the four worthies,
And yourself are of my near kin.

DISSIMULATION.

Indeed thou say'st true, for Cogging is a kinsman
to Dissimulation.
But, tell me, have you taken the names of the
guests ?

COGGING.

Yea, sir.

DISSIMULATION.

Let me hear after what fashion.

The names of the guests told by COGGING.

COGGING.

There is, first and foremost, Master Forgery and
Master Flattery, Master Perjury and Master
Injury :

¹ [The writer seems here to have intended an allusion to
Scogin, whose "Jests" were well-known at that time as a
popular book.]

Master Cruelty and Master Pickery, Master Bribery and Master Treachery ;
 Master Wink-at-wrong and Master Headstrong,
 Mistress Privy-theft
 And Master Deep-deceit, Master Abomination and
 Mistress Fornication his wife, Ferdinando
 False-weight and Frisset False-measure his
 wife.

DISSIMULATION.

Stay : Fornication and Frisset False-measure are
 often familiar with my Lady Lucre, and one
 of them she accounts her friend.
 Therefore they shall sit with the bride in the mid-
 dest, and the men at each end.
 Let me see ; there are sixteen, even as many as
 well near is able
 To dine in the summer-parlour at the playing-table ;
 Beside my fellow Fraud, and you, fellow Simony ;
 But I shall have a great miss of my fellow Usury.

SIMONY.

Take no care for that ; he came home yesterday
 even, no longer :
 His pardon was quickly begged, and that by a
 courtier.
 But, sirrah, since he came home, he had like to
 have slain Good Neighbourhood and Liberality,
 Had not True Friendship stepp'd between them
 very suddenly.
 But, sirrah, he hit True Friendship such a blow on
 the ear,
 That he keeps out of all men's sight, I think ¹ for
 shame or for fear.

¹ [*I think*, omitted in second 4°.]

DISSIMULATION.

Now, of my troth, it is a pretty jest : hath he
made True Friendship hide his head ?
Sure, if it be so, Good Neighbourhood and Libera-
lity for fear are fled.

SIMONY.

But, fellow Dissimulation, tell me what priest
shall marry ye ?

DISSIMULATION.

Marry, that shall an old friend of mine, Master
Doctor Hypocrisy.

SIMONY.

Why, will you not have Sir Peter Pleaseman to
supply that want ?

DISSIMULATION.

Indeed, Sir Peter is a good priest, but Doctor
Hypocrisy is most ancient.
But, Cousin Cogging, I pray you go to invite the
guests,
And tell them that they need not disturb their
quietness :
Desire them to come at dinner-time, and it shall
suffice,
Because I know they will be loth so early to rise.
But at any hand will Doctor Hypocrisy,
That he meet us at the church very early ;
For I would not have all the world to wonder at
our match :

It is an old proverb: 'Tis good having a hatch before the door, but I'll have a door before the hatch.

COGGING.

Sir, I will about it as fast as I can hie.
I'll first to that scald bald-knave Doctor Hypocrisy.
[*Aside. Exit* COGGING.]

SIMONY.

But, fellow Dissimulation, how darest thou marry with Love, bearing no love at all?
For thou dost nothing but dissemble: then thy love must needs be small.
Thou canst not love but from the teeth forward.
Sure the wife that marries thee shall highly be preferr'd.

DISSIMULATION.

Tush, tush! you are a merry man: I warrant you I know what I do,
And can yield a good reason for it, I may say unto you.
What, and if the world should change, and run all on her side,
Then might I by her means still in good credit abide.
Thou knowest Love is ancient, and lives peaceably without any strife;
Then sure the people will think well of me, because she is my wife.

SIMONY.

Trust me, thou art as crafty, to have an eye to the main-chance.

As the tailor, that out of seven yards stole one and a half of durance.¹

He served at that time the devil in the likeness of Saint Katherine :

Such tailors will thrive, that out of a doublet and a pair of hose can steal their wife an apron.

The doublet-sleeves three fingers were too short ;
The Venetians ² came nothing near the knee.

DISSIMULATION.

Then, for to make them long enough, I pray thee
what did he ?

SIMONY.

Two pieces set an handful broad, to lengthen them
withal ;

Yet for all that below the knee by no means they
could fall :

He, seeing that, desired the party to buy as much
to make another pair :

The party did : yet, for all that, he stole a quarter
there.

DISSIMULATION.

Now, sure, I can him thank, he could his occupa-
tion.

My fellow Fraud would laugh to hear one dress'd
of such a fashion.

But, fellow Simony, I thank you heartily, for com-
paring the tailor to me.

¹ A strong kind of cloth so called, and several times men-
tioned in Shakespeare. See "Henry IV." Part I., act i.
sc. 2 ; "Comedy of Errors," act iv. sc. 3, &c.—*Collier*.

² *The Venetians came nothing near the knee.* Venetians
were a kind of hose, or breeches, adopted from the fashions
of Venice.

As who should say his knavery and my policy did agree.¹

SIMONY.

Not so ; but I was the willinger to tell thee, because
I know it to be a true tale ;
And to see how artificers do extol Fraud, by whom
they bear their sale.
But come, let us walk, and talk no more of this :
Your policy was very good, and so, no doubt, was
his. [Exeunt.

*Enter MERCATORE reading a letter to himself; and
let GERONTUS the Jew follow him, and speak as
followeth.*

GERONTUS.

Signor Mercatore, why do you not pay me ? think
you, I will be mock'd in this sort ?
This is three times you have flouted me : it seems
you make thereat a sport.
Truly pay me my money, and that even now
presently,
Or by mighty Mahomet I swear I will forthwith
arrest ye.

MERCATORE.

Ha, pray a bare wit me tree or four days : me have
much business in hand :
Me be troubled with letters, you see here, dat
comes from England.

GERONTUS.

Tush, this is not my matter : I have nothing there-
with to do.

¹ [First 4° reads, *not agree.*]

Pay me my money, or I'll make you, before to your
lodging you go.
I have officers stand watching for you, so that you
cannot pass by ;
Therefore you were best to pay me, or else in prison
you shall lie.

MERCATORE.

Arrest me, dou scal knave ! marry, do, and if thou
dare ;
Me will not pay de one penny : arrest me, do, me
do not care.
Me will be a Turk ; me came heder for dat
cause :
Derefore me care not de so mush as two straws.

GERONTUS.

This is but your words, because you would defeat
me :
I cannot think you will forsake your faith so lightly.
But seeing you drive me to doubt, I'll try your
honesty ;
Therefore be sure of this, I'll go about it presently.
[Exit.]

MERCATORE.

Marry, farewell and be hang'd, sitten, scald,
drunken Jew.
I warrant ye me shall be able very well to pay
you.
My Lady Lucre have sent me here dis letter,
Praying me to cosen de Jew for love a her.
Derefore me'll go to get a some Turk apparel,
Dat me may cosen de Jew, and end dis quarrel.
[Exit.]

*Enter three beggars ; that is to say, TOM BEGGAR,
WILY WILL, and SIMPLICITY, singing.*

THE SONG.

*To the wedding, to the wedding, to the wedding go we :
To the wedding a-begging, a-begging all three.*

*Tom Beggar shall brave it, and Wily Will too,
Simplicity shall knave it, wherever we go :
With lustly bravado, take care that care will,
To catch it and snatch it we have the brave skill.*

*Our fingers are lime-twigs, and barbers we be,
To catch sheets from hedges most pleasant to see :
Then to the alewife roundly we set them to sale,
And spend the money merrily upon her good ale.*

*To the wedding, to the wedding, to the wedding go we :
To the wedding a-begging, a-begging all three.*

FINIS.

TOM.

Now truly, my masters, of all occupations under
the sun, begging is the best ;
For when a man is weary, then he may lay him
down to rest.
Tell me, is it not a lord's life in summer to louse
one under a hedge,
And then, leaving that game, may go clip and coll
his Madge ?
Or else may walk to take the wholesome air abroad
for his delight,
When he may tumble on the grass, have sweet
smells, and see many a pretty sight ?

Why, an emperor for all his wealth can have but
 his pleasure,
 And surely I would not lose my charter of liberty
 for all the king's treasure.

WILL.

Shall I tell thee, Tom Beggar, by the faith of a
 gentleman, this ancient freedom I would not
 forego,
 If I might have whole mines of money at my
 will to bestow.
 Then, a man's mind should be troubled to keep
 that he had ;
 And you know it were not for me : it would make
 my valiant mind mad.
 For now we neither pay Church-money, subsidies,
 fifteens, scot nor lot :
 All the payings we pay is to pay the good ale-pot.

SIMPLICITY.

But, fellow beggars, you cosen me, and take away
 all the best meat,
 And leave me nothing but brown bread or fin of
 fish to eat.
 When you be at the alehouse, you drink up the
 strong ale, and give me small beer :
 You tell me 'tis better than the strong to make me
 sing clear.
 Indeed, you know, with my singing I get twice so
 much as ye,
 But, and you serve me so, you shall sing yourselves,
 and beg alone for me.

TOM.

We stand prating here : come, let us go to the gate.

Mass, I am greatly afraid we are come somewhat too late.

Good gentle Master Porter, your reward do bestow
On a poor lame man, that hath but a pair of legs
to go.

WILL.

For the honour of God, good Master Porter, give
somewhat to the blind,
That the way to the alehouse in his sleep cannot
find.

TOM.

For the good Lord's sake, take compassion on the
poor.

Enter FRAUD, with a basket of meat on his arm.

FRAUD.

How now, sirs ! you are vengeance hasty : can ye
not tarry,
But stand bawling so at my lady's door ?
Here, take it amongst you ; yet 'twere a good alms-
deed to give you nothing,
Because you were so hasty, and kept such a calling.

TOM.

I beseech ye not so, sir, for we were very hungry :
That made us so earnest, but we are sorry we
troubled ye.

SIMPLICITY (*aside*).

Look how greedy they be, like dogs that fall a
snatching.

You shall see that I shall have the greatest alms,
because I said nothing.
Fraud knows me, therefore he'll be my friend ; I
am sure of that.
They have nothing but lean beef, ye shall see I
shall have a piece that is fat.
Master Fraud, you have forgot me : pray ye, let
me have my share.

FRAUD.

Faith, all is gone ; thou com'st too late : thou seest
to all is given there.
By the faith of a gentleman, I have it not : I would
I were able to give thee more.

SIMPLICITY.

O sir, I saw your arms hang out of a stable-door.¹

FRAUD.

Indeed, my arms are at the painter's ; belike, he
hung them out to dry.
I pray thee, tell me what they were, if thou canst
them descry.

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, there was never a scutcheon, but there was
two trees rampant,
And then over them lay a sour tree passant,
With a man like you in a green field pendant,
Having a hempen halter about his neck, with a
knot under the left ear, because you are a
younger brother.

¹ [A pun, probably, upon *alms* and *arms*.]

Then, sir, there stands on each side, holding up
 the cres',
 A worthy ostler's hand in a dish of grease.
 Besides all this, on the helmet stands the hang-
 man's hand,
 Ready to turn the ladder, whereon your picture
 did stand :
 Then under the helmet hung cables ¹ like chains,
 and for what they are I cannot devise,
 Except it be to make you hang fast, that the crows
 might pick out your eyes.

FRAUD.

What a swad is this ? I had been better to have
 sent him to the back-door,
 To have gotten some alms amongst the rest of the
 poor. [Aside.
 Thou prat'st thou canst not tell what, or else art
 not well in thy wit :
 I am sure my arms are not blas'd so far abroad as
 yet.

SIMPLICITY.

O yes, sir, your arms were known a great while ago,
 For your elder brother Deceit did give those arms
 too.
 Marry, the difference is all, which is the knot
 under the left ear.
 The painter says, when he is hung, you may put
 out the knot without fear.
 I am sure they were arms, for there was written
 in Roman letters round about the hempen
 collar :
 Given by the worthy valiant captain, Master Fraud,
 the ostler.

¹ [Old copy, *tables*.]

Now, God be wi' ye, sir; I'll get me even close to
the back-door.

Farewell, Tom Beggar and Wily Will; I'll beg
with you no more. [Exit.

TOM.

O farewell, Simplicity: we are very loth to lose
thy company.

FRAUD.

Now he is gone, give ear to me. You seem to be
sound men in every joint and limb,
And can ye live in this sort to go up and down
the country a-begging?

O base minds! I trow I had rather hack it out by
the highway-side,

Than such misery and penury still to abide.

Sirs, if you will be rul'd by me, and do what I
shall say,

I'll bring ye where we shall have a notable fine
prey.

It is so, sirs, that a merchant, one Mercatore, is
coming from Turkey,

And it is my lady's pleasure that he robbed should
be:

She hath sworn that we shall be all sharers alike,
And upon that willed me some such companions
as you be to seek.

TOM.

O worthy Captain Fraud, you have won my noble
heart;

You shall see how manfully I can play my part.

And here's Wily Will, as good a fellow as your
heart can wish,

To go a-fishing with a crank through a window,
or to set limetwigs to catch a pan, pot or
dish.

WILL.

He says true ; for I tell you, I am one that will
not give back
Not for a double shot out of a black Jack.
O sir, you bring us a-bed, when ye talk of this
gear.
Come, shall we go, worthy Captain ? I long, till
we be there.

FRAUD.

Ay, let us about it, to provide our weapons ready,
And when the time serves, I myself will conduct
ye.

TOM.

O, valiantly spoken ! Come, Wily Will, two pots
of ale we'll bestow
On our captain courageously for a parting blow.
[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter the Judge of Turkey with GERONTUS
and MERCATORE.*

Sir Gerontus, because you are the plaintiff, you
first your mind shall say.
Declare the cause you did arrest this merchant
yesterday.

GERONTUS.

Then, learned judge, attend. This Mercatore,
whom you see in place,
Did borrow two thousand ducats of me but for a
five weeks' space :

VOL. VI.

Z

Then, sir, before the day came, by his flattery he
 obtained one thousand more,
 And promis'd me at two¹ months' end I should
 receive my store :
 But before the time expired, he was closely fled
 away,
 So that I never heard of him at least this two
 years' day,
 Till at the last I met with him, and my money did
 demand,
 Who sware to me at five days' end he would pay
 me out of hand.
 The five days came, and three days more ; then
 one day he requested :
 I, perceiving that he flouted me, have got him
 thus arrested.
 And now he comes in Turkish weeds to defeat me
 of my money,
 But, I trow, he will not forsake his faith : I deem
 he hath more honesty.

JUDGE.

Sir Gerontus, you know, if any man forsake his
 faith, king, country, and become a Mahomet,
 All debts are paid : 'tis the law of our realm, and
 you may not gainsay it.

GERONTUS.

Most true, reverend judge, we may not ; nor I will
 not against our laws grudge.

¹ [So old copies ; but the period named before was *three months*.]

JUDGE.

Signor Mercatore, is this true that Gerontus doth tell ?

MERCATORE.

My lord judge, de matter and de circumstance be true, me know well ;
But me will be a Turk, and for dat cause me came here.

JUDGE.

Then, it is but folly to make many words.—
Signor Mercatore, draw near :
Lay your hand upon this book, and say after me.

MERCATORE.

With a good will, my lord judge ; me be all ready.

GERONTUS.

Not for any devotion, but for Lucre's sake of my money.

JUDGE. [MERCATORE repeating after him.]

Say : I, Mercatore, do utterly renounce before all the world my duty to my Prince, my honour to my parents, and my good-will to my country.—Furthermore, I protest and swear to be true to this country during life, and thereupon I forsake my Christian faith——

GERONTUS.

Stay there, most puissant judge.—Signor Mercatore, consider what you do :

Pay me the principal ; as for the interest, I forgive
it you.

And yet the interest is allowed amongst you
Christians, as well as in Turkey :

Therefore, respect your faith, and do not seek ¹ to
deceive me.

MERCATORE.

No point da interest, no point da principal.²

GERONTUS.

Then pay me the one half, if you will not pay me
all.

MERCATORE.

No point da half, no point denier : me will be a
Turk, I say.

Me be weary of my Christ's religion, and for dat
me come away.

GERONTUS.

Well, seeing it is so, I would be loth to hear the
people say, it was 'long of me

Thou forsakest thy faith : wherefore I forgive thee
frank and free ;

Protesting before the judge and all the world
never to demand penny nor halfpenny.

¹ [Old copies, *seemc.*]

² See Shakespeare's "Love's Labour's Lost," edit. Collier, ii. 308 and 360; Beaumont and Fletcher's "Monsieur Thomas," edit. Dyce, vii. 364. Thomas Nash, in his "Strange Newes," 1592, sig. D 3, uses *no point* just in the same way, as a sort of emphatic double negative.—"No point ; ergo, it were wisely done of goodman Boores son, if he should go to the warres," &c.

MERCATORE.

O sir Gerontus, me take a your proffer, and tank
you most heartily.

JUDGE.

But, Signor Mercatore, I trow, ye will be a Turk
for all this.

MERCATORE.

Signor, no : not for all da good in da world me
forsake a my Christ.

JUDGE.

Why, then, it is as sir Gerontus said ; you did
more for the greediness of the money
Than for any zeal or goodwill you bear to Turkey.

MERCATORE.

O sir, you make a great offence :
You must not judge a my conscience.

JUDGE.

One may judge and speak truth, as appears by
this ;
✓ Jews seek to excel in Christianity and Christians
in Jewishness. [Exit.

MERCATORE.

Vell, vell ; but me tank you, Sir Gerontus, with
all my very heart.

GERONTUS.

Much good may it do you, sir ; I repent it not for
my part.

But yet I would not have this bolden you to serve
another so :

Seek to pay, and keep day with me, so a good
name on you will go. *[Exit.]*

MERCATORE.

You say vel, sir ; it does me good dat me have
cosen'd de Jew.

Faith, I would my Lady Lucre de whole matter
now knew :

What is dat me will not do for her sweet sake ?

But now me will provide my journey toward Eng-
land to take.

Me be a Turk ? no : it will make my Lady Lucre
to smile,

When she knows how me did da scal' Jew beguile.
[Exit.]

Enter LUCRE, and LOVE with a vizard, behind.

LUCRE.

Mistress Love, I marvel not a little what coy con-
ceit is crept into your head,

That you seem so sad and sorrowful, since the
time you first did wed.

Tell me, sweet wench, what thou ailest, and if I
can ease thy grief,

I will be prest to pleasure thee in yielding of relief.

Sure, thou makest me for to think something has
chanc'd amiss.

I pray thee, tell me what thou ailest, and what the
matter is.

LOVE.

My grief, alas ! I shame to show, because my bad intent

Hath brought on me a just reward and eke a strange event.

✓ Shall I be counted Love ? nay, rather lascivious Lust,

Because unto Dissimulation I did repose such trust.

But now I moan too late, and blush my hap to tell,

My head in monstrous sort, alas ! doth more and more still swell.

LUCRE.

Is your head then swollen, good Mistress Love ? I pray you let me see.

Of troth it is, behold a face that seems to smile on me :

It is fair and well-favoured, with a countenance smooth and good ;

Wonder is the worst,¹ to see two faces in a hood.

Come, let's go, we'll find some sports to spurn away such toys.

LOVE.

✓ Were it not for Lucre, sure, Love had lost all her joys. [Exeunt.

Enter SERVICEABLE DILIGENCE, the Constable, and SIMPLICITY, with an Officer to whip him, or two, if you can.

SIMPLICITY.

Why, but must I be whipp'd, Master Constable, indeed ?

You may save your labour, for I have no need.

¹ [The worst wonder is.]

DILIGENCE.

I must needs see thee punished ; there is no
remedy,
Except thou wilt confess, and tell me,
Where thy fellows are become, that did the robbery.

SIMPLICITY.

Indeed, Master Constable, I do not know of their
stealing,
For I did not see them, since we went together
a-begging.
Therefore pray ye, sir, be miserable¹ to me, and
let me go,
For I labour to get my living with begging, you
know.

DILIGENCE.

Thou wast seen in their company a little before
the deed was done ;
Therefore it is most likely thou knowest where
they are become.

SIMPLICITY.

Why, Master Constable, if a sheep go among
wolves all day,
Shall the sheep be blam'd if they steal anything
away ?

DILIGENCE.

Ay, marry, shall he ; for it is a great presumption
That, keeping them company, he is of like profession—

¹ [Compassionate.]

But despatch, sirs ; strip him and whip him :
Stand not to reason the question.

SIMPLICITY.

Indeed, 'twas Fraud, so it was, it was not I ;
And here he comes himself : ask him, if I lie.

Enter FRAUD.

DILIGENCE.

What sayest thou, villain ? I would advise thee
hold thy tongue :
I know him to be a wealthy man and a burgess of
the town.—
Sir, and it please your mastership, here one slan-
ders you with felony :
He saith you were the chief doer of a robbery.

FRAUD.

What says the rascal ? But you know,
It standeth not with my credit to brawl ;
But, good Master Constable, for his slanderous
report
Pay him double, and in a greater matter command
me you shall. [*Exit.*]

SIMPLICITY.

✓ Master Constable, must the countenance carry out
the knave ?
Why, then, if one will face folks out, some fine
repariment he must have.
[BEADLE *put off his clothes.*]

BEADLE.

Come, sir Jack-sauce, make quick despatch at once:
You shall see how finely we will fetch the skin
from your bones.

SIMPLICITY.

Nay, but tell me whether you be right-handed or
no?

BEADLE.

What is that to thee? why wouldst thou so fain
know?

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, if you should be both right-handed, the one
would hinder the other:
Then it would not¹ be done finely, according to
order;
For if I be not whipp'd with credit, it is not worth
a pin.
Therefore, I pray, Master Constable, let me be
whipp'd upon my skin.

DILIGENCE.

Whereon dost thou think they would whip thee, I
pray thee declare,
That thou puttest us in mind, and takest such
great care?

SIMPLICITY.

I was afraid you would have worn out my clothes
with whipping;
Then afterward, I should go naked a-begging.

¹ [Not in first 4^o.]

BEADLE.

Have no doubt of that ; we will favour thy clothes :
Thou shalt judge that thyself by feeling the blows.

*[Lead him once or twice about, whipping him,
and so exit.]*

*Enter JUDGE NEMO, the CLERK of the 'size, the CRIER,
and SERVICEABLE DILIGENCE ; the JUDGE and
CLERK being set, the CRIER shall sound three
times.*

JUDGE.

Serviceable Diligence, bring hither such prisoners
as are in custody.

DILIGENCE.

My diligence shall be applied very willingly.
Pleaseth it you, there are but three prisoners, so
far as I know,
Which are Lucre and Conscience, with a deformed
creature much like Bifrons,¹ the base daughter
of Juno.

JUDGE.

No ! where is that wretch Dissimulation ?

DILIGENCE.

He hath transformed himself after a strange fashion.

JUDGE.

Fraud ! where is he become ?

¹ The learned Constable refers, of course, to Love, who has
already been on the stage in a vizard at the back of her
head : see p. 358.

DILIGENCE.

He was seen in the streets, walking in a citizen's gown.

JUDGE.

What is become of Usury !

DILIGENCE.

He was seen at the Exchange very lately.

JUDGE.

Tell me, when have you heard of Simony ?

DILIGENCE.

He was seen this day walking in Paul's, having conference and very great familiarity with some of the clergy.

JUDGE.

Fetch Lucre and Conscience to the bar.

DILIGENCE.

Behold, worthy judge, here ready they are.

Enter LUCRE and CONSCIENCE.

JUDGE.

Stand forth. Diligence, divide them asunder.

CLERK.

Lucre, thou art indicted by the name of Lucre,

To have committed adultery with Mercatore the merchant and Creticus the lawyer.

Thou art also indicted for the robbery of Mercatore :
Lastly and chiefly, for the consenting to the murder of Hospitality.

What sayest thou, art thou guilty or not in these causes ?

LUCRE.

Not guilty. Where are mine accusers ? they may shame to show their faces :

I warrant you, none comes, nor dare, to discredit my name.

In despite of the teeth of them that dare, I speak in disdain.

JUDGE.

Impudent ! canst thou deny deeds so manifestly known ?

LUCRE.

In denial stands trial : I shame not ; let them be shown.

It grinds my gall they should slander me on this sort :

They are some old-cankered currish corrupt carls, that gave me this report.

My soul craves revenge on such my secret ¹ foes,
And revengement I will have, if body and soul I lose.

JUDGE.

Thy hateful heart declares thy wicked life :
In the abundance of thy abomination all evils are rife,—

¹ [Old copies, *sacred*. This was Mr Collier's suggestion.]

But what sayest thou, Conscience, to thy accusation,
That art accused to have been bawd unto Lucre,
and spotted with all abomination ?

CONSCIENCE.

What should I say ; nay, what would I say in this
our naughty living ?

LUCRE.

Good Conscience, if thou love me, say nothing.
[*Aside.*]

CLERK.

Diligence, suffer her not to stand prating.
[*Let him put her aside.*]

JUDGE.

What letter is that in thy bosom, Conscience ?
Diligence, reach it hither.

[*Make as though he¹ read it.*]
Conscience, speak on ; let me hear what thou canst
say,
For I know in singleness thou wilt a truth bewray.

CONSCIENCE.

My good lord, I have no way to excuse myself :
She hath corrupted me by flattery and her ac-
cursed pelf.
What need further trial, sith I, Conscience, am a
thousand witnesses ?

¹ [Old copies, *ye.*]

I cannot choose but condemn us all in living
amiss.
Such terror doth affright me, that living I wish to
die :
I am afraid there is no spark left for me of God's
mercy.

JUDGE.

Conscience, where hadst thou this letter ?

CONSCIENCE.

It was put into my bosom by Lucre,
Willing me to keep secret our lascivious living.
I cannot but condemn us all in this thing.

JUDGE.

How now, malapert ; stand you still in defence or
no ?
This letter declares thy guilty Conscience : how
sayest thou, is it not so ?
Tell me, why standest thou in a maze ? speak
quickly.
Hadst thou thy tongue so liberal, and now stand
to study ?

LUCRE.

O Conscience ! thou hast kill'd me ; by thee I am
overthrown.

JUDGE.

It is happy that by Conscience thy abomination
is known :
Wherefore I pronounce judgment against thee on
this wise :

Thou shalt pass to the place of darkness, where
 thou shalt hear fearful cries ;
 Weeping, wailing, gnashing of teeth, and torment
 without end ;
 Burning in the lake of fire and brimstone, because
 thou canst not amend.
 Wherefore, Diligence, convey her hence : throw her
 down to the lowest hell,
 Where the infernal sprites and damned ghosts do
 dwell ;
 And bring forth Love !

[*Exit* LUCRE and DILIGENCE.

Let LUCRE *make ready for* LOVE *quickly, and come*
with DILIGENCE.

Declare the cause, Conscience, at large how thou
 comest so spotted,
 Whereby many by thee hath been greatly infected ;
 For under the colour of Conscience thou deceived'st
 many,
 Causing them to defile the temple of God, which is
 man's body.
 A clean conscience is a sacrifice, God's own resting-
 place :
 Why wast thou then corrupted so, and spotted on
 thy face ?

CONSCIENCE.

When Hospitality had his throat cut by Usury,
 He oppressed me with cruelty and brought me to
 beggary,
 Turning me out of house and home ; and in the end
 My gown to pay my rent to him I did send.
 So, driven to that extremity, I have fallen to that
 you see ;
 Yet after judgment I hope of God's mercy.

JUDGE.

O Conscience, shall cankered coin corrupt thy heart?
Or shall want in this world cause thee to feel everlasting smart?
O Conscience, what a small time thou hast on earth to live:
Why dost thou not, then, to God all honour give?
Considering the time is everlasting that thou shalt live in bliss,
If by thy life thou rise from death to judgment, mercy, and forgiveness.

Enter LOVE with DILIGENCE.

Stand aside, Conscience. Bring Love to the bar.
What sayest thou to thy deformity: who was the cause.

LOVE.

Lady Lucre——

JUDGE.

Did Lucre choke thee so, that thou gavest thyself over unto Lust?
And did prodigal expenses cause thee in Dissimulation to trust?
Thou wast pure (Love), and art thou become a monster,
Bolstering thyself upon the lasciviousness of Lucre?
Love, answer for thyself: speak in thy defence.

LOVE.

I cannot choose but yield, confounded by Conscience.

VOL. VI.

2 A

JUDGE.

Then judgment I pronounce on thee, because thou followed Lucre,

Whereby thou hast sold thy soul, to feel like torment with her :

/ Which torments comprehended are in the worm of Conscience,

Who raging still shall ne'er have end, a plague for thine offence.

Care shall be thy comfort, and sorrow thy life sustain ;

Thou shalt be dying, yet never dead, but pining still in endless pain.

Diligence, convey her to Lucre : let that be her reward,

Because unto her cankered coin she gave her whole regard.

But as for Conscience, carry her to prison,

| There to remain until the day of the general session.

Thus we make an end—

Knowing that the best of us all may amend :

Which God grant to his goodwill and pleasure,

| That we be not corrupted with the unsatiate desire of vanishing earthly treasure ;

For covetousness is the cause of 'resting man's conscience :

Therefore restrain thy lust, and thou shalt shun the offence.

FINIS.

THE THREE LORDS
&
THREE LADIES
OF
LONDON.

EDITION.

The pleasant and Stately Morall of the three Lordes and three Ladies of London. With the great Joy and Pompe, Solemnized at their Mariages: Commicallly interlaced with much honest Mirth, for pleasure and recreation, among many Morall observations, and other important matters of due Regard. By R. W. London, Printed by R. Ihones, at the Rose and Crowne neere Holburne Bridge. 1590. 4°. Black letter. With an engraving on the title.

*Enter, for the Preface, a Lady very richly attired,
representing London, having two Angels before
her, and two after her, with bright rapiers in
their hands.*

LONDON *speaketh.*

Lo, gentles, thus the Lord doth London guard,
Not for my sake, but for his own delight ;
For all in vain the sentinels watch and ward,
Except he keep the city day and night.
Now may my foes in vain both spurn and spite,
My foes, I mean, that London represent,
Guarded from heaven by angels excellent.

This blessing is not my sole benefit :
All England is, and so preserv'd hath been,
Not by man's strength, his policy and wit,
But by a power and Providence unseen ;
Even for the love wherewith God loves our Queen,
In whom, for whom, by whom we do possess
More grace, more good, than London can express.

And that hath bred our plenty and our peace,
And they do breed the sports you come to see ;
And joy it is that I enjoy increase.
My former fruits were lovely Ladies three ;¹
Now of three Lords to talk is London's glee :
Whose deeds I wish may to your liking frame,
For London bids you welcome to the same.

FINIS.

¹ [Alluding to the "Three Ladies of London," 1584.]

THE ACTORS' NAMES.

POLICY,	}	<i>The three Lords of London.</i>	{	WIT,	}	<i>Their Pages.</i>
POMP,				WEALTH,		
PLEASURE,				WILL,		

NEMO, a grave old man.

LOVE,	}	<i>Three Ladies of London.</i>
LUORE,		
CONSCIENCE,		

HONEST INDUSTRY,	}	<i>Three Sages.</i>
PURE ZEAL,		
SINCERITY,		

PRIDE,	}	<i>Three Lords of Spain.</i>	{	SHAME,	}	<i>Their Pages.</i>
AMBITION,				TREACHERY,		
TYRANNY,				TERROR,		

DESIRE,	}	<i>Three Lords of Lincoln.</i>
DELIGHT,		
DEVOTION,		

SORROW, a Jailer.

SIMPLICITY, a poor Freeman of London.

PAINFUL PENURY, his Wife.

DILIGENCE, a Post or an Officer.

FEALTY,	}	<i>Two Heralds-at-Arms.</i>
SHEALTY,		

FRAUD,	}	<i>Four Gallants.</i>
USURY,		
DISSIMULATION,		
SIMONY,		

FALSEHOOD,	}	<i>Two that belong to FRAUD and DIS- SIMULATION.</i>
DOUBLE-DEALING,		

THE PLEASANT AND STATELY MORAL
OF
THE THREE LORDS OF LONDON.

Enter the three Lords and their Pages: first POLICY, with his Page WIT before him, bearing a shield; the impress a tortoise, the word Providens securus: next POMP, with his Page WEALTH bearing his shield, the word Glory sans peere; the impress a lily: last, PLEASURE, his Page WILL, his impress a falcon; the word Pour Temps. POLICY attired in black, POMP in rich robes, and PLEASURE in colours.

POLICY.

Here I advance my shield and hang it up,
To challenge him who ever dare deny
That one of those three London ladies rare
Ought not of right be match'd with Policy,
A London lord, the which I represent.

POMP.

And Pomp provides his challenge in his word,
Glory sans peere, claiming the one of them,
Not by compulsion, but by common right.
Yet, maugre men, my shield is here advanc'd

For one matchless. A London lady best
Besee meth Pomp, a London lord, to have.

PLEASURE.

Pleasure hath soar'd, as doth his impress show,
To look aloof on earthly ladies all.
And never could my curious eye discern
A dame of worth for London Pleasure's love,
But one, and she doth shine as silver dove.
Of self-bred soil, of London is her race;
For whom in challenge I my shield advance.

POLICY.

Thus each in honour of his mistress,
And in regard of his well-daring mind,
Hath here empris'd the challenge of his right.
But, lordships both and brethren bred and sworn,
A caution must be had in this conceit,
That all our thoughts aspire not to one heaven,
Nor all our ships do sail for one self haven;
I mean, that all our suits and services
We tend and tender to one only dame,
All choosing one, refusing th' other two.

POMP.

A great mislike amongst us that might breed.

PLEASURE.

I seek but one, and her unto myself.

POMP.

And one I wish sans partner of my love.

POLICY.

It stands with honour to be sole or none.

POMP.

Whom lovest thou, Pleasure?

PLEASURE.

Hark ye. *[Whisper in his ear.]*

POMP.

Tush! ye lie.

WILL.

If my master were a soldier, that word would
have the stab.

WIT.

Well, Will, still you'll be a saucy scab.

POMP.

Why, Pleasure, hath Pomp¹ chosen Lucre's love?

PLEASURE.

Why, Pomp, but [because] Pleasure honours Lucre
most.

POLICY.

And Policy may Lady Lucre gain
 Before you both, but let us not contend,
 For Nemo doth the ladies prisoners keep,
 Though they were slandered late with liberty,
 And marriage to three far-born foreigners.
 Then, first it fits we practise their release,
 And see them, and by sight our liking please;²
 For yet we love, as gossips tell their tales,
 By hearsay: fame, not favour, hath us yet inflam'd.

¹ [Old copy, *Pompe hath.*]² [Old copy, *place.*]

POMP.

Lord Policy with reason hath discuss'd ;
Pleasure, consent ; and so our love shall hold.

PLEASURE.

Ye never found that London's Pleasure err'd
From reason, or from Pomp and Policy.

POLICY.

Come on, sir boy, attend you well your charge :
[To his Page WIT.
Wait in this place to watch and ward this shield.
If any man, in honour of his love,
So hardy be with stroke of sword to attain
This shield, and challenge him that hereby chal-
lengeth,
Say for thy lord, as should a trusty page,
That Policy doth dare him to perform
A hardier task than common challengers.
If he demand what Policy may be,
A lord of London, say—one of the three.

POMP.

And you, sir boy, for Pomp perform the like ;
[To WEALTH.
Bid him, that dare his impress batter once,
Be well advis'd he be no beggar's brat,
Nor base of courage, nor of bad conceit,
To match himself with such magnificence,
As fits Lord Pomp of London for his love :
Call, if he come that can encounter me,
[F]or move me not for each envious swad.

PLEASURE.

Will, be not wanton, nor of wayward mood :
[To WILL.

Wait as do these ; use faith and diligence,
And mark him well that dare disdain this shield,
Which London's lord, that Pleasure hath to name,
Hath here advanc'd in honour of his dame.
I bid thee mark him well, whate'er he be,
That London's Pleasure doth in malice scorn,
For he's a rascal or a stranger born.
Good boy, mark well his gesture and his look,
His eye, his gait, his weapon, and attire,
And dog him to his lodging or his den,
For I will make him scum and scorn of men.
No better boy than Will, when Will is pleas'd :
Be pleas'd, my boy, and so be my good Will.

POLICY.

And so, good boys, farewell ; look to your charge.
Watch well, good Wit, who scorneth London's
Policy ;
Be wary, Wit, for thou canst well discern.

POMP.

Wealth, watch for Pomp, for thou canst well
defend.

PLEASURE.

Will can do something too, when pleaseth him.
[*Exeunt the three Lords.*]

WIT.

Will is a good boy, where better is none.

WILL.

Nay, Wit were the best boy, if Will were gone.

WEALTH.

Nay, Wealth is the best boy, sirs : let that alone.

WIT.

I-wis he say'th true, Will : this Wealth's a gay lad.

WILL.

I care not for him, curmudgeonly swad.

WEALTH.

Well, miss me awhile, and you'll go near to be sad.

WIT.

Will, ye are Will-fool, if of him ye be not glad.

WILL.

Nay, Wit, if thou want him, thou'lt go near to be mad.

WEALTH.

To keep us still quiet I would other talk we had.

WIT.

I hope we'll not fall out, being none but three.

WEALTH.

If Wealth were away, Wit and Will would agree.

WILL.

Nay, Wit and Will are at strife, when there's nobody but me.

WIT.

Let pass, and of our shields, sirs, let's make a little glee.

Will, what gives thy master here ? a buzzard or a kite ?

WILL

Wit, you show yourself a gentleman by guessing
so right.

A buzzard? thou buzzard! Wit, hast no more
skill,

Than take a falcon for a buzzard?

WIT.

O be quiet, good Will :
It was but for sport, for I know the bird else.

WEALTH.

Thou mightest see it was no buzzard, man, by the
bells.¹

WIT.

What's the reason of this falcon? I pray thee,
Will, show.

WILL.

Thou knowest that a falcon soars high, and stoops
low :
So doth Pleasure.

WIT.

But what's the word?

WILL.

Pour temps, for time.

WIT.

A very pretty one : I would it were in rhyme.

WEALTH.

In rhyme, Wit! why so?

¹ [The bells attached to the falcon; the *impress* of Pleasure.]

WIT.

Because it wants reason.

WILL.

Look for my fist, Wit, if ye rap out such treason.

WIT.

Treason to what, boy ?

WILL.

To my master's bird.

WIT.

Now, Will, my thumb wags : it was but to his word.

WILL.

'Tis a pleasant gentleman, this young Master Wit.
Your master hath something too : I pray ye, what's
it ?

WIT.

Look, Will, and guess.

WILL.

'Tis a toad in a shell.

WEALTH.

I had as lief ye had said a frog in a well.

WIT.

Is't not a great butterfly ? Will, can'st thou tell ?

WILL.

What is it in sadness ?

WIT.

A tortoise, my boy ; whose shell is so hard that a loaden cart may go over and not break it, and so she is safe within, and wheresoever she goes she bears it on her back, needing neither other succour or shelter, but her shell. The word underneath her is *Providens securus*, the provident is safe, like the tortoise armed with his own defence, and defended with his own armour ; in shape somewhat round, signifying compass, wherein always the provident foresee to keep themselves within their own compass, my boy.

WILL.

Wittily spoken. Now, Wealth's master hath got a daffadowndilly.

WEALTH.

If Will had not been wilful, now, he might have said a lily, whose glory is without comparison and beauty matchless ; for Solomon, the most sumptuous king that ever was, was never comparable in glory with the lily ; neither is there any city matchable with the pomp of London. Mistake me not, good boys, that this pomp tends to pride ; yet London hath enough, but my Lord Pomp doth rightly represent the stately magnificence and sumptuous estate, without pride or vainglory, to London accommodate ; and therefore the word is well applied to the impress (*Glory sans peere*), for that the lily is neither proud of the beauty, nor vainglorious of the pomp ; no more is London ; but if it be joyful of anything, it is of the grace and plenty, both flowing from two such fountains as becomes not us to name. Now, therefore, my good boys, know that my

master is rather Magnificence than Pomp in bad sense, and rather Pomp than Pride in the best sense.

WILL.

And my lord is not Pleasure sprung of Voluptuousness, but of such honourable and kind conceit as heaven and humanity well brooks and allows : Pleasure pleasing, not pernicious.

WIT.

Who would have thought that Will had been so philosophous ? But what means the word *Pour temps* in the shield for time ?

WILL.

Wit, shall I call the[e] fool ? the best pleasure of all lasts but a time :
For of all pleasures most pleasing to sight,
Methinks there is none to the falcon's high flight ;
Yet diseases end it : the breach of a wing,
Nay, the breach of a feather, spoils that sweet thing.

WIT.

And so my master hath the 'vantage, will ye or no. Pomp and Pleasure may be ill.

WILL.

May not Policy be bad ?

WEALTH.

Wit, well-overtaken by Will, that crafty lad.

WIT.

A crafty goose : the gander gives him health.

Bad Policy's seldom found in so Christian a commonwealth

As London is, I trust, where my master is a lord.

WILL,

And ours so too.

WEALTH.

Well, let us accord ;

For Wit's a good thing, yet may be ill-applied.

WIT.

And so may Wealth, be it employed in pride,
And Will worst of all, when it disdains a guide.

WILL.

A Jackanapes hath wit.

WIT.

And so he hath Will.

WEALTH.

But he never hath Wealth : now ye are both still.

WIT.

Yes, he wears a chain.¹

WILL.

Well-spoke, and like a bearward.

WEALTH.

If ye be *non plus*, let the matter fall.

¹ Referring to the chains of gold formerly worn by persons of rank and property.

WILL.

Wit, dost thou see ? thus goes Wealth away with
all.

WIT.

Let's reason no further, for we shall have glee.
Here is a challenger to our shields : step we aside.

Enter SIMPLICITY in bare black, like a poor citizen.

WILL.

He will eat them, I think, for he gapes very wide.

WEALTH.

Say nothing to him, and ye shall see the fool go by.

WILL.

Sirrah, gape not so wide for fear of a fly.

SIMPLICITY.

Fly, flam-flurt ! Why, can a fly do hurt ?

WIT.

Yea, have ye not heard that the fly hath her
spleen,
And the ant her gall ?

SIMPLICITY.

My uncle hath so, I ween ; for it's an angry old
fellow,
When his gall runs over : children, good day ;
Whose pretty lads are you three ?

WIT.

Three ! are you sure ?

SIMPLICITY.

I'll not swear, till I have told you : one, two, three.

WILL.

I beshrew thee.

SIMPLICITY.

Me, boy ? Why, I am beshrewed already, for I am married.

WEALTH.

Then, thou hast a wife.

SIMPLICITY.

Yea, I would thou hadd'st her, if thou could'st stay her tongue.

WEALTH.

I thy wife, man ! Why, I am too young.

SIMPLICITY.

And I am too old. But in good earnest, good boys—be not angry that I call you boys, for ye are no men yet : ye have no beards, and yet I have seen boys angry for being called boys. Forsooth they would be called youths : well, yet a boy is a boy, and a youth is a youth.—Well, if ye be not ashamed of the boy, good boys, whose boys are ye !

WIT.

No whit ashamed, sir, of that that we are, nor ashamed at all of those whom we serve ! for boys we be, and as we be, we serve the three Lords of London : to wit, Policy, Pomp, and Pleasure.

SIMPLICITY.

A pretty-spoken child, and a pretty wit.

WILL.

Wit's his name, indeed : are ye one of his god-fathers, ye hit it so right ?

SIMPLICITY.

It is more than I know : then, is thy name Wit, boy ? Now, of mine honesty, welcome, for I have wanted thee a great while.

WIT.

Welcome, sir ! how so ? why do ye entertain me so kindly ? I cannot dwell with you, for I have a master already.

SIMPLICITY.

So have I, too, but she learns me little wit—my wife, I mean. Well, all this while I stand here, my wares are not abroad, and so I may lose both my customers and market.

WEALTH.

Wares, sir ! have ye wares ? what wares do ye sell ?

SIMPLICITY.

Truly, child, I sell ballads. Soft ; whose wares are these that are up already ? ¹ I paid rent for my standing, and other folks' wares shall be placed afore mine ! this is wise, indeed.

WIT.

O, the fineness of the wares, man, deserves to have good place.

¹ Alluding to the manner in which ballad-sellers of that day used to expose their goods, by hanging them up in the same way that the three lords had hung up their shields.

SIMPLICITY.

They are fine indeed. Who sells them, can ye tell ? Is he free ?

WIT.

Our masters be : we wait on this ware, and yet we are no chapmen.

SIMPLICITY.

Chapmen : no, that's true, for you are no men : neither chapmen nor chopmen, nor chipmen nor shipmen ; but if ye be chappers, choppers, or chippers, ye are but chapboys ; and, chapboys, ye are double.

WILL.

Double ! how is it ? Teach me that, and you will make me laugh a little.

WEALTH.

And me a little.

WIT.

And me a little.

SIMPLICITY.

Then your three little laughs will make one great laugh.

WIT.

True ; for if three fools were one fool, that were a great fool. [Points to SIMPLICITY.
But how are we double chapboys ?

SIMPLICITY.

Because ye have two chaps, an upper chap and a nether chap.

WILL.

Ha, ha, ha !

WIT.

Ha, ha, ha !

WEALTH.

Ha, ha, ha !

SIMPLICITY.

You said you would laugh but a little, but you laugh a great deal : why do ye laugh so much ?

WILL.

Because your wit was so great in expounding your meaning.

SIMPLICITY.

Ye may see it is a good thing to have wit.

WIT.

I thank you, sir.

WEALTH.

And what say you to Wealth ?

SIMPLICITY.

Wealth ? Marry, Wealth is better.

WEALTH.

I thank you, sir.

WILL.

And how say you to Will ?

SIMPLICITY.

Indeed, good Will is a great matter.

WILL.

Yea, between a maid and a bachelor.

SIMPLICITY.

Why, you are not in love, boy ?

WILL.

Yes, but I am, and in charity too.

SIMPLICITY.

Charity ! alas, poor child ! thou in charity ? ha, ha ! now must I laugh.

WIT.

But you laugh a great while, and you laugh very loud.

SIMPLICITY.

Then, I owe you nothing for laughing, and you hear me the better.

WEALTH.

But now laugh not we.

SIMPLICITY.

No, you may be maddle-coddle.¹ Well, here's three passing fine lads, if a man were able to keep them all. Let me see : Wealth ! O, that's a sweet lad : then Wit ! O, that's a fine lad : Will : O, that's a pretty lad. Will, Wit, and Wealth, God lend ye health. I would I could guile their masters of two of them. If I had Fraud here, that served Lady Lucre, he would teach me : he would teach me to 'tice one of them from his master. Which

¹ [Foolish, maudlin.]

of them, now, if a man should steal one? Will? nay, I care not for Will, outsep¹ he be good-will. Wit? a pretty child, but a man cannot live by wit. Wealth? Yea, marry, sir, I would I could win that Wealth, for then I need neither Will nor Wit; nor I need sell no ballads, but live like a mouse in a mill, and have another to grind my meal for me. I'll have a fling at one of them anon.

WEALTH.

Do you not forget yourself, gaffer?

WIT.

Have ye not wares to sell, gaffer?

WILL.

When do you show, gaffer?

SIMPLICITY.

Well-rememb'red, pretty lad: ye may see children can teach old folks. I am an unthrift, indeed. Well, my wares shall out now. But, sirs, how sell you your wares? How many of these for a groat?

WEALTH.

Our wares are not to be sold.

SIMPLICITY.

Not for silver nor gold? Why hang they, then, in the open market?

WILL.

To be seen, not bought.

¹ [Except.]

SIMPLICITY.

Then they are like ripe plums upon a rich man's tree, that set men's teeth a-watering, when they are not to be bought. But what call you these things?

WIT.

Scutcheons.

SIMPLICITY.

Cushions? Alas! it were pity to sit on such fine cushions. But come, my boys, if you'll buy any of my wares, here's my stall, and I'll open and show straight.

WEALTH.

What dainty fine ballad have you now to be sold?

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, child, I have *Chipping-Norton*, a mile from Chapel o' th' Heath—a lamentable ballad of burning the Pope's dog; the sweet ballad of the Lincolnshire bagpipes¹; and *Peggy and Willy*:—But now he is dead and gone: Mine own sweet Willy is laid in his grave. *La, la, la, lan ti dan derry, dan da dan, lan ti dan, dan tan derry, dan do.*

WIT.

It is a doleful discourse, and sung as dolefully.

SIMPLICITY.

Why, you cannot mend it, can ye?

WIT.

What will you lay on that? for I myself dare

¹ [See Haslitt's "Proverbs," 1869, p. 265-6.]

lay six groats to six of your bald ballads, that you yourself shall say I sing better than you.

SIMPLICITY.

What a brag-boy is this, to comparison with a man! But, boy, boy, I will not lay six ballads to six groats, but I will lay six ballads to six jerks at your buttocks, that you shall not sing so well as I.

WIT.

That I shall not? No! possible, you will not let me sing?

SIMPLICITY.

I not let you? Is that spoken like Wit? It is spoken like a woodcock: how can I stay thee, if thou wilt sing out thy throat?

WIT.

Well, then, to our bargain: six ballads to six stripes, and who shall keep stakes?

SIMPLICITY.

Neither of your companions; for that's, ask my fellow, if I be a thief.

WILL.

Will you keep the stakes yourself?

SIMPLICITY.

Best of all, for I mean plainly, and will pay, if I lose. Here's my six ballads: they be ready. Now, how shall I come by your six stripes, boy?

WIT.

Down with your breeches, I'll fetch a rod and deliver them straight.

SIMPLICITY.

Nay, then, I care not, if thou keep stakes.

WIT.

You speak too late, gaffer, having challenged preheminnence.

SIMPLICITY.

Then, let's lay no wager, but sing for good fellowship.

WIT.

Agreed. Who shall begin?

SIMPLICITY.

O boy! who is the elder? Hast thou not heard, give flounders to thy elder?

WIT.

You mistake the fish: trust me, I am sure 'tis give plaice; but begin with a good grace.

[Here SIMP. sings first and WIT after, dialogue-wise: both to music, if ye will.

WIT.

Now, sirs, which sings best?

SIMPLICITY.

Tush, your copesmates shall not judge.

Friend, what say you? which of us sings best?
[To one of the auditory.

WILL.

To say truth, there's but a bad choice.
How will you sell the ballad you sang, for I'll
not buy the voice ?

SIMPLICITY.

Why wilt thou not buy my voice ?

WILL.

Because it will cost me more money to buy sallet-
oil to keep it from rusting, than it is worth. But,
I pray ye, honest man, what's this ?

SIMPLICITY.

Read, and thou shalt see.

WILL.

I cannot read.

SIMPLICITY.

Not read, and brought up in London ! Went'st
thou never to school ?

WILL.

Yes, but I would not learn.

SIMPLICITY.

Thou wast the more fool. If thou cannot read,
I'll tell thee. This is Tarlton's picture. Didst
thou never know Tarlton ?¹

¹ The best, and indeed what may be considered the only,
account of Tarlton the actor precedes the edition of his
Jests, reprinted for the Shakespeare Society in 1844.

WILL.

No: what was that Tarlton? I never knew him.

SIMPLICITY.

What was he? A prentice in his youth of this honourable city, God be with him. When he was young, he was leaning to the trade that my wife useth now, and I have used, *vide lice shirt*,¹ water-bearing. I-wis, he hath toss'd a tankard in Cornhill ere now: If thou knew'st him not, I will not call thee ingram;² but if thou knewest not him, thou knewest nobody. I warrant, here's two crack-ropes knew him.

WIT.

I dwelt with him.

SIMPLICITY.

Didst thou? now, give me thy hand: I love thee the better.

WILL.

And I, too, sometime.

SIMPLICITY.

You, child! did you dwell with him sometime?
Wit dwelt with him, indeed, as appeared by his rhyme,

And served him well; and Will was with him now and then. But, soft, thy name is Wealth: I think in earnest he was little acquainted with thee.

O, it was a fine fellow, as e'er was born:

There will never come his like, while the earth can corn.

O passing fine Tarlton! I would thou hadst lived yet.

¹ [*Videlicet.*]

² [*Ignorant.*]

WEALTH.

He might have some, but thou showest small wit.
There is no such fineness in the picture that I see.¹

SIMPLICITY.

Thou art no Cinque-Port man; thou art not
wit-free.

The fineness was within, for without he was plain;
But it was the merriest fellow, and had such
jests in store

That, if thou hadst seen him, thou would'st have
laughed thy heart sore.

WEALTH.

Because of thy praise, what's the price of the
picture?

SIMPLICITY.

I'll tell thee, my lad. Come hither: if thou wilt
be ruled by me, thou shalt pay nothing; I'll give
it thee, if thou wilt dwell with me; and, I pro-
mise thee, this counsel is for thy prefermin'.² Hadst
not thou better serve a freeman of the City, and
learn a trade to live another day, than to be a
serving-boy in thy youth, and to have no occupa-
tion in thine age. I can make thee free, if thou
wilt be my prentice.

WEALTH.

Why, Wealth is free everywhere: what need I
serve you? My lord is a freeman, if that may do
me good.

¹ [Alluding to some wood engraving of Tarlton, which Simplicity had in his basket. To the reprint of "Tarlton's Jests," by the Shakespeare Society, are prefixed two woodcuts, made from a drawing of the time of Elizabeth, and no doubt soon after the death of Tarlton of the plague in 1588.]

² [Preferment.]

SIMPLICITY.

I cry you mercy, master boy : then, your master is free of the Lord's Company, and you serve him, that you may be a lord, when you come out of your years.

WIT.

Wealth is a proud boy, gaffer : what say you to me ?

SIMPLICITY.

Thy name is Wit : wilt thou dwell with me ?

WIT.

If I like your name and science, perchance we'll agree.

SIMPLICITY.

Nay, my name and mine honesty is all one : it is well known. He's a very fool that cannot beguile me, for my name is Simplicity.

WILL.

Coads,¹ gaffer ! were you not a mealman once, and dwelt with Lady Conscience ?

SIMPLICITY.

Yes, for want of a better.

WILL.

What, a better man ?

SIMPLICITY.

No ; for want of a better mistress : she was as very a fool as I. We dwelt so long together, that we went both on begging.

¹ [An ejaculation, apparently equivalent to *God*.]

WIT.

Indeed, they that use a good conscience cannot suddenly be rich. But I'll not dwell with ye : you are too simple a master for me.

WILL.

Nor I'll not dwell with you for all this world's treasure.

SIMPLICITY.

No ? Why, whom serve you, Will ?

WILL.

I serve my Lord Pleasure.

SIMPLICITY.

And whom serve you, Wit ?

WIT.

I serve my Lord Policy.

SIMPLICITY.

And whom serve you, Wealth ?

WEALTH.

I serve my Lord Pomp.

SIMPLICITY.

You should be served all with my Lord Birchley, if you were well served. These lads are so lordly that louts care not for them ; for Wealth serves Pomp, Wit serves Policy, and Will serves Pleasure. Wealth, will you buy this picture for your lord ?

[Shew Tarlton's picture.]

WEALTH.

No : it is too base a present for Pomp.

WIT.

And Policy seldom regards such a trifle.

WILL.

Come on, gaffer, come on ; I must be your best chapman : I'll buy it for Pleasure. Hold, there is a groat.

SIMPLICITY.

Gramercy, good Will, my wife shall love thee still ;
And since I can neither get Wit nor Wealth,
Let my wife have her Will, and let me have my health.

God forgive me, I think I never name her, but it
conjures her : look where she comes !

Be mannerly, boys, that she knock ye not with her staff :

Keep your own counsel, and I'll make ye laugh.

What do ye lack ? What lack ye ?

Stand away, these boys, from my wares :

Get ye from my stall, or I'll wring you by the ears ;

Let my customers see the wares. What lack ye ?

What would ye have bought ?

Enter PAINFUL-PENURY, attired like a water-bearing woman, with her tankard.

PENURY.

You have customers enou', and if they were ought.
What do you with these boys here, to filch away
your ware ?

You show all your wit : you'll ne'er have more care.

VOL. VI.

2 C

WILL.

Content ye, good wife : we do not filch, but buy.

PENURY.

I meant not you, young master, God's blessing on
your heart :
You have bought indeed, sir, I see, for your part.
Be these two young gentlemen of your company ?
Buy, gentlemen, buy ballads to make your friends
merry.

WIT.

To stand long with your burden, methinks, you
should be weary.

PENURY.

True, gentlemen ; but you may see, poor Painful-
Penury
Is fain to carry three tankards for a penny.
But, husband, I say, come not home to dinner ; it's
Ember-day :
You must eat nothing till night, but fast and pray.
I shall lose my draught at Conduit, and therefore
I'll away.
Young gentlemen, God be with ye.

SIMPLICITY.

Wife, must I not dine to-day ?

PENURY.

No, sir, by my fay.

[Exit PENURY.]

SIMPLICITY.

If I must not eat, I mean to drink the more :
What I spare in bread, in ale I'll set on the score.
How say ye, my lads, and do I not speak wisely ?

WIT.

Methinks ye do ; and it's pretty that Simplicity
Hath gotten to his wife plain Painful-Penury.

SIMPLICITY.

Yea, I thank God, though she be poor and scarce
cleanly,
Yet she is homely, careful, and comely.

One call within.

Wit, Wealth, and Will, come to your lords quickly.

WILL.

Must the scutcheons hang still ?

One within.

Yea, let them alone.

WIT.

Farewell, Master Simplicity. [*Exeunt.*

SIMPLICITY.

Farewell, good master boys, e'en heartily, e'en
heartily, heartily.
And, hear ye, Will, I thank you for your hansel¹
truly.
Pretty lads ! hark ye, sirs, how ? Will, Wit,
Wealth !

[Re-]enter WIT.

WIT.

What's the matter, you call us back so suddenly ?

¹ [The first purchase made in the day—the ballad which
Wit had bought of Simplicity.]

SIMPLICITY.

I forgot to ask you whether your three lords of London be courtiers or citizens ?

WIT.

Citizens born, and courtiers brought up. Is this all ? Farewell. [Exit.]

SIMPLICITY.

Citizens born and courtiers brought up ! I think so ; for they that be born in London are half courtiers, before they see the court : for fineness and mannerliness, O, passing ! My manners and misbehaviour is mended half in half, since I gave over my mealman, and came to dwell in London : ye may see time doth much. Time wears out iron horseshoes : time tears out milstones : time seasons a pudding well ; and time hath made me a free man, as free to bear water and sell ballads as the best of our copulation. I would have thought once my horse should have been free as soon as myself, and sooner too, for he would have stumbled with a sack of meal, and lien along in the channel with it, when he had done ; and that some calls freedom. But it's but a dirty freedom, but, ye may see, bad horses were but jades in those days. But soft : here comes customers. What lack ye ? What is't ye lack ? What lack ye ? Come along, and buy nothing. Fine ballads ! new ballads ! What lack ye ?

Enter NEMO and the three Lords.

NEMO.

My lords, come on. What suits have you to me ?

POLICY.

Renowned Nemo, the most only one
That draws no breath but of th' eternal air,
That knowest our suit before we bound to speak,
For thou art the very Oracle of thoughts ;
Whose virtues do encompass thee about,
As th' air surrounds this massy globe of earth ;
Who hast in power whatever pleaseth thee,
And canst bestow much more than we may crave,
To thee we seek ; to thee on knees we sue,
That thou wilt deign from thralldom to release
Those lovely dames, that London ladies are.

NEMO.

What, those three caitiffs, long ago condemn'd ?
Love, Lucre, Conscience ? well-deserving death,
Being corrupt with all contagion :
The spotted ladies of that stately town ?

POMP.

Love, Lucre, Conscience, we of thee desire,
Which in thyself hast all perfection,
Accomplished with all integrity,
And needest no help to do what pleaseth thee ;
Which holdest fame and fortune both thy slaves,
And dost compel the Destinies draw the coach,
To thee we sue, sith power thou hast thereto,
To set those ladies at their liberty.

PLEASURE.

At liberty, thou spotless magistrate,
That of the cause dost carry all regard,
Careless of bribes, of birth and parentage,
Because thyself art only born to bliss.
Bless us so much, that lords of London are,

That those three ladies, born and bred with us,
May by our suits release of thralldom find.

NEMO.

Release, my lords ! why seek ye their release,
That have perpetual prison for their doom ?

POLICY.

But Nemo can from thence redeem them all.

NEMO.

Their deeds were cause, not Nemo, of their thrall.

POMP.

Yet Nemo was the judge that sentence gave.

NEMO.

But Nemo never spill'd, whom he could save.

PLEASURE.

Thou from perpetual prison may'st revoke.

POLICY.

Death hath no power 'gainst him to give a stroke.

POMP.

Thou only mild and courteous sir, vouchsafe
To grant our suit, and set those ladies free.

NEMO.

What is your purpose in this earnest suit ?

PLEASURE.

To marry them, and make them honest wives.

NEMO.

But may it be, that men of your regard,
Lords of such fortune and so famous place,
Will link yourselves with ladies so forlorn,
And so distained with more than common crimes?

POLICY.

Marriage doth make amends for many a miss.

POMP.

And love doth cover heaps of cumbrous evils.

PLEASURE.

And doth forget the faults that were before.

NEMO.

Mean as you say : you need to say no more.

POLICY.

In token that we mean what we have said,
Lo, here our shields, the prizes of our love,
To challenge all, except thyself, that dare
Deny those ladies to be ours by right.

NEMO.

Woo them and win them, win them and wear
them too :

I shall both comfort and discourage you, my lords.
The comfort's this : of all those former crimes,
Wherewith the world was wont these dames to
charge,

I have them clear'd, and made them all as free
As they were born, no blemish left to see.
But the discourage, gentle lords, is this :
The time of their endurance hath been long,

Whereby their clothes of cost and curious stuff
Are worn to rags, and give them much disgrace.

POMP.

Alas, good ladies ! was there none that sued
For their release, before we took't in hand ?

NEMO.

Yes, divers for fair Lucre sought release,
And some for Love would fain have paid the fees ;
But silly Conscience sat without regard
In sorrow's dungeon, sighing by herself.
Which when I saw that some did sue for Love,
And most for Lucre, none for Conscience,
A vow I made, which now I shall perform :
Till some should sue to have release for all,
Judg'd as they were, they should remain in thrall.
But you, that crave their freedoms all at once,
Shall have your suit, and see them here ere long.
A little while you must have patience,
And leave this place. Go in, my lords, before.

POMP.

Becometh us to wait on Nemo still.

NEMO.

Not so ; but, lordings, one condition more.
You promise me, sith they are in my power,
I shall dispose them, when they are releas'd,
Upon you three, as I shall think it best.

POMP.

Do but command, and we shall all subscribe.

NEMO.

Then go your ways, for I have here to do.

[*Exeunt Three Lords.*]

Enter SORROW.

Sorrow, draw near ; to-morrow bring thou forth
Love, Lucre, Conscience, whom thou hast in thrall,
Upon these stones to sit and take the air,
But set no watch or spial¹ what they do.

[*Exeunt Ambo.*]

Enter FRAUD, USURY, DISSIMULATION, SIMONY,
and SIMPLICITY.

FRAUD.

How happy may we call this merry day, my
mates, wherein we meet, that once were desperate,
I think, ever to have seen one another, when Nemo,
that upright judge, had, by imprisoning our mis-
tresses, banished us (by setting such diligent watch
for us) out of London, and almost out of the world.
But live we yet and are we met, and near our old
seat? Usury, is it thou? Let me see, or hath
some other stolen thy face? speakest thou, man?

USURY.

No, Fraud: though many have counterfeited both
thee and me,

We are ourselves yet, and no changelings, I see.
And why shouldst thou ask me, man, if I live?

The silly ass cannot feed on harder forage than
Usury: she upon thistles, and I upon a brown
crust of a month old.

¹ [Espial. The word occurs again further on.]

SIMPLICITY.

So that Usury and an ass are two of the profitablest beasts that a man can keep ; yet th'one hath sharper teeth than th' other.

FRAUD.

But what means Dissimulation ? He droops, methinks. What cheer, man ? Why, cousin, frolic a fit. Art thou not glad of this meeting ? What's the cause of thy melancholy ?

DISSIMULATION.

Not melancholic, but musing how it comes to pass that we are thus fortunate to meet, as we do ?

SIMONY.

I'll tell thee why we met : because we are no mountains.¹

SIMPLICITY.

But ye are as ill, for ye are monsters.

SIMONY.

And men may meet, though mountains cannot.

FRAUD.

In token that this meeting is joyous to us all, let us embrace altogether with heart's-joy and affection.

SIMPLICITY.

I see many of these old proverbs prove true ; 'tis merry when knaves meet. [*Aside.*]

¹ [Probably a reference is intended to the proverbial expression about Mahomet and the mountain.]

FRAUD.

How, sir ! what's that ?

SIMONY.

If a man had a casting-net, he might catch all you.

FRAUD.

Art thou not Simplicity ?

SIMPLICITY.

Goodman Simplicity, for I am married, and it like your mastership. And you are Master Fraud, too ; a pox on your worship. I see a fox and a false knave have all one luck, the better for bann-ing ; and many of you crafty knaves live merrilier than we honest men.

FRAUD.

Sirrah, bridle your tongue, if you'll be welcome to our company. No girds nor old grudges, but congratulate this meeting. And, sirs, if you say it, let's tell how we have lived since our parting.

SIMPLICITY.

O, it is great pity.

USURY.

What, to tell how we have lived ?

SIMPLICITY.

No ; that ye do live.

FRAUD.

Yet again, sirrah ? Usury, as for thee, it were folly to ask, for thou livest but too well ; but Dis-

simulation and Simony, how have you two lived ? Discourse, I pray you heartily.

SIMPLICITY.

Faith, even like two mice in an ambry,¹ that eat up all the meat, and when they have done gnaw holes in the cupboard.

DISSIMULATION.

Fraud, after my 'scaping away at the Sessions, where I shifted, as thou knowest, in three sundry shapes : one of a friar, and they can dissemble ; another like a woman, and they do little else ; the third as a saint and a devil—and so is a woman—I was banished out of London by Nemo. To the country went I amongst my old friends, and never better loved than among the russet-coats. Once in a month I stole in o'th' market-day to Leaden-hall and about, and sometime to Westminster Hall. Now, hearing some speech that the ladies should be sued for, I am come in hope of my old entertainment, supposing myself not known of many, and hoping the three lords will prevail in their suit, and I to serve one of them.

SIMPLICITY.

He shall do well that gives thee a coat, but he should do better that could take off thy skin.

[*Aside.*]

SIMONY.

And I have been a traveller abroad in other realms, for here I am so cried out against by preachers (and yet some ministers, that be none,

¹ An ambry or aumbry is a pantry or closet. The next line explains the word.

could be content to use me) that I was glad to be gone: now, in some other lands, and not very far off, I am secretly fostered—saving in Scotland and the Low-Countries, [where] they are reformed, they cannot abide me. Well, now and then hither I came stealing over sea, and hearing as you hear, intend as you do.

FRAUD.

And for mine own part, among artificers,
And amongst a few bad-conscienced lawyers,
I have found such entertainment as doth pass,
Yet would I with Lucre fain be as I was.

SIMPLICITY.

Fraud is as ill as a cut-purse, by the mass. [*Aside.*]

USURY.

And for Usury, the longer I live the greater love I
find ;
Yet would I be with Lucre again, to please my
mind.

FRAUD.

Here's a good fellow, too, one of our acquaintance. How hast thou lived, Simplicity?

SIMPLICITY.

More honestly than all the rest of thy company; for when I might beg no longer, as begging was but bad, for you cosen'd me once of an alms, I fell to tankard-bearing, and so got a wife of the same science, Painful-Penury: then got I my freedom, and feeling my shoulder grow weary of the tankard, set up an easier trade—to sell ballads.

FRAUD.

Hadst thou a stock to set up withal?

SIMPLICITY.

Wise enough to tell you, I!—and yonder's my stall: but beware I lose nothing, for if I do, I'll lay it straight to some of you; for I saw none so like thieves, I promise you, since I set up.

FRAUD.

You are a wise man, when your nose is in the cup. But soft, who comes here! step we close aside, for these be the three ladies, for my life, brought out of prison by their keeper. Let us be whist, and we shall hear and see all. Sirrah, you must say nothing.

Enter SORROW and the three Ladies: he sets them on three stones on the stage.

SIMPLICITY.

Not till ye speak, for I am afraid of him that's with the women.

CONSCIENCE.

O Sorrow, when, when, Sorrow, wilt thou cease
To blow the spark that burns my troubled soul,
To feed the worm that stings my fainting breast,
And sharp the steel that gores my bleeding heart?
My thoughts are thorns, my tears hot drops of
lead:

I plain, I pine, I die, yet never dead.
If world would end, my woe should but begin:
Lo, this the case of Conscience for her sin;
And sin the food, wherewith my worm was fed,
That stings me now to death, yet never dead.

LOVE.

Yet never dead, and yet Love doth not live,

Love, that to loss in life her folly led,¹
 Folly the food whereon her frailty fed,
 Frailty the milk that Nature's breast did give :
 Life, loss, and folly : frailty, food, and kind,
 Worm, sting, thorns, fire, and torment to the mind ;
 Life but a breath, and folly but a flower,
 Frailty, clay, dust, the food that fancy scorns ;
 Love a sweet bait to cover losses sour,
 Flesh breeds the fire that kindles lustful thorns ;
 Lust, fire, bait, scorn, dust, flower and feeble breath,
 Die, quench, deceive, flie, fade, and yield to death.
 To death ? O good ! if death might finish all :
 We die each day, and yet for death we call.

LUCRE.

For death we call, yet death is still in sight.
 Lucre doth scald in drops of melting gold
 Accusing rust calls on eternal night,²
 Where flames consume, and yet we freeze with cold.
 Sorrow adds sulphur unto fury's heat,
 And chops them ice whose chattering teeth do beat ;
 But sulphur, snow, flame, frost, nor hideous crying
 Can cause them die that ever are in dying,
 Nor make the pain diminish or increase :
 Sorrow is slack, and yet will never cease.

SORROW.

When Sorrow ceaseth, Shame shall then begin
 With those that wallow senseless in their sin.
 But, ladies, I have drawn you from my den
 To open air, to mitigate some moan.
 Conscience, sit down upon that sweating stone,
 And let that flint, Love, serve thee for a seat ;
 And, Lady Lucre, on that stone rest you.
 And, ladies, thus I leave you here alone.

¹ [Old copy, *lent.*]² [Old copy, *might.*]

Mourn ye, but moan not I shall absent be ;
But good it were sometime to think on me. [*Exit.*]

CONSCIENCE.

Comfort it is to think on sorrow past.

LOVE.

Sorrow remains, where joy is but a blast.

LUCRE.

A blast of wind is world's felicity.

CONSCIENCE.

A blasting wind, and full of misery.

LOVE.

O Conscience, thou hast more tormented me.

LUCRE.

Me hath thy worm, O Conscience, stung too deep.

CONSCIENCE.

But more myself my thoughts tormented have,
Than both of you, in Sorrow's sullen cave ;
From whence drawn forth, I find but little rest :
A seat uneasy, wet, and scalding hot,
On this hard stone hath Sorrow me assign'd.

LOVE.

And on my seat myself I frozen find :
No flint more hard, no ice more cold than this.

LUCRE.

I think my seat some mineral stone to be :

I cold from it, it draw[eth] heat from me.
Ladies, consent, and we our seats will view.

CONSCIENCE.

Dare we for shame our stained faces shew ?

LOVE.

My double face is single grown again.

LUCRE.

My spots are gone : my skin is smooth and plain.

CONSCIENCE.

Doff we our veils, and greet this glad some light ;
The chaser of gloom, Sorrow's heavy night.¹

LOVE.

Hail, cheerful air, and clearest crystal sky.

LUCRE.

Hail, shining sun and fairest firmament,
Comfort to those that time in woe have spent.

CONSCIENCE.

Upon my weeping stone is set REMORSE in
brazen letters.

LOVE.

And on this flint in lead is CHARITY.

LUCRE.

In golden letters on my stone is CARE.

CONSCIENCE.

Then Lucre sits upon the stone of Care.

¹ [Old copy, *might*.]

LUCRE.

And Conscience on the marble of Remorse.

LOVE.

Love on the flint of frozen Charity.
Ladies, alas, what tattered souls are we.

CONSCIENCE.

Sorrow our hearts, and time our clothes hath torn.

LUCRE.

Then sit we down like silly souls forlorn,
And hide our faces that we be not known ;
For Sorrow's plagues tormenteth¹ me no more,
Than will their sight, that knew me heretofore.

LOVE.

Then will their sight, that knew us heretofore,
Draw ruth and help from them for our relief.

CONSCIENCE.

For our relief ? for Conscience and for Love
No help, small ruth that our distress may move.

LOVE.

O Conscience, thou wouldst lead me to despair,
But that I see the way to hope is fair,
And hope to heaven directs a ready way,
And heaven to help is prest to them that pray.

LUCRE.

That pray with faith, and with unfeign'd remorse,
For true belief and tears make prayer of force.

¹ [Old copy, *tormented*.]

CONSCIENCE.

Then veil ourselves, and silent let us stay,
Till heaven shall please to send some friends this
way. *[Sit all down.]*

[Enter FRAUD, DISSIMULATION, &c.]

FRAUD.

Ladies, unmask!¹ blush not for base attire :
Here are none but friends and servants all. Dear
Lady Lucre,
Dearer unto us than daily breath we draw from
sweetest air,
Dearer than life, dearer than heaven itself,
Deign to discover those alluring lamps,
Those lovely eyes more clear than Venus' star,
Whose bright aspects world's wonder do produce.
Unveil, I say, that beauty more divine
Than Nature (save in thee) did ever paint,
That we, sworn slaves unto our mistress, may
Once more behold those stately lovely looks,
And do those duties which us well beseems,
Such duties as we all desire to do.

CONSCIENCE.

I know that tongue. Lucre, beware of Fraud.

LUCRE.

Of Fraud! Indeed by speech it should be he.
Fraud, what seekest thou?

FRAUD.

Lucre, to honour thee with wit, with worth, with
all I have ;

¹ [Old copy, *unmask'd.*]

To be thy servant, as I was before,
To get thee clothes, and what thou wantest else.

LUCRE.

No, Fraud, farewell : I must be won no more
To keep such servants as I kept before.

SIMONY.

Sweet Lady Lucre, me thou mayest accept.

LUCRE.

How art thou called ?

SIMONY.

Simony.

LUCRE.

Aye ? No, sir ; Conscience saith.

CONSCIENCE.

No ; Lucre now beware, false not thy faith,
For Simony's subject to perpetual curse.

DISSIMULATION.

As you two have sped, I would desire to speed no
worse.

FRAUD.

Make you a suit : you may chance to speed better.

DISSIMULATION.

Not I, for of all my tongue is best known ;
But if I speak, it shall be to her that was once mine
own.

Good Lady Love, thou little knowest the grief
That I, thy friend, sustain for thy distress,

And less believest what care I have of thee.
 Look up, good Love, and to supply thy wants
 Ask what thou wilt, and thou shalt have of me,
 Of me, that joy more in thy liberty
 Than in this life or ¹ light that comforts me.

LOVE.

O gall in honey, serpent in the grass !
 O bifold fountain of two bitter streams,
 Dissimulation fed with viper's flesh,
 Whose words are oil, whose deeds, the darts of
 death !
 Thy tongue I know, that tongue that me beguil'd,
 Thyself a devil mad'st me a monster vild.
 From the[e] well known well may I bless myself :
 Dear-bought repentance bids me shun thy snare.

CONSCIENCE.

O happy Love, if now thou can beware.

SIMPLICITY.

Marry, but hear ye, motley-beard. I think this
 blindfold buzzardly hedge-wench spoke to ye ; she
 knows ye, though she see thee not. Hark ye, you
 women, if you'll go to the alehouse, I'll bestow two
 pots on ye, and we'll get a pair of cards² and some
 company, and win twenty pots more ; for you play
 the best at a game, call'd smelling of the four
 knaves, that ever I saw.

USURY.

Four ! soft, yet they have not smell'd thee.

¹ [Old copy, *our*.]

² [i.e., A pack of cards ; the expression was very common ;
deck, five lines lower, was often used for *pack*.]

SIMPLICITY.

No? I am one more than is in the deck, but you'll be smell'd as soon as ye begin to speak. I'll see what they'll say to me. Hear ye, you women, wives, widows, maids, men's daughters, what shall I call ye? these four fellows (hark ye, shall I call ye crafty knaves?) make me believe that you are the three that were the three fair ladies of London.

CONSCIENCE.

Gentle Simplicity, we are unhappy they.

SIMPLICITY.

Now, ye bad fellows, which of ye had such a word as gentle Sim?

USURY.

Bad fellows, ye rascal! If e'er you bring me pawn, I'll pinch ye for that word.

SIMPLICITY.

I cry you mercy, Master Inquiry—Master Usury:
I meant not you.

FRAUD.

If you mean us, we may be even with ye too.

SIMPLICITY.

Tut! I knew ye an ostler, and a thief beside:
You have rubb'd my horse-heels ere now for all
your pride.

But, ladies, if ye be the three ladies, which of ye dwelt in Kent Street? One of you did, but I know not which is she, ye look all so like broom-wenches. I was once her servant: I'll ne'er be

ashamed of her, though I be rich and she be poor ;
yet if she that hath been my dame, or he that hath
been my master, come in place, I'll speak to them,
sure : I'll do my duty. Which is Lady Conscience?

CONSCIENCE.

Even I am she, Simplicity.

SIMPLICITY.

I am glad ye are out of prison. I thought ye
had forgot me : I went a-begging for¹ you, till
the beadles snapp'd me up : now I am free, and
keep a stall of ballads. I may buy and sell. I
would you had as good a gown now, as I carried
once of yours to pawn to Usury here.

CONSCIENCE.

Gramercy, good Simplicity. Wilt thou be with
me now ?

SIMPLICITY.

No, I thank you heartily ; I'll beg no more. I
cannot with ye, though I would, for I am married
to Painful-Penury. Look now, my proud stately
masters, I may if I will ; and you would, if ye
might.

FRAUD.

No, not dwell with such a beggar as Conscience.

SIMPLICITY.

No, Fraud ne'er lov'd Conscience, since he was
an ostler.

USURY.

Who cares for Conscience but dies a beggar ?

¹ [Old copy, *from*.]

SIMPLICITY.

That will not Usury do : he will first take three-score pound in the hundred.

DISSIMULATION.

Love, look on me, and I will give thee clothes.

LOVE.

I will no more by thee be so disguised.

SIMPLICITY.

Ye do the wiser, for his face looks like a cloak-back.

DISSIMULATION.

In thy affections I had once a place.

LOVE.

Those fond affections wrought me foul disgrace.

DISSIMULATION.

I'll make amends, if ought amiss were done.

LOVE.

Who once are burn'd, the fire will ever shun.

DISSIMULATION.

And yet once burn'd to warm again may prove.

LOVE.

Not at thy fire ; I will be perfect Love.

SIMPLICITY.

I promise you, the wenches have learn'd to answer wittily.

Here's many fair proffers to Lucre and Love,
But who clothes poor Conscience? she may sit
long enough.

USURY.

I will clothe her straight.

[USURY takes FRAUD's cloak, and casts it on
CONSCIENCE.

SIMPLICITY.

Will you, Master Usury? that's honestly spoke.
Ha! that's no gramercy to clothe her with another
man's cloak;
But I see you have a craft in the doing, Master
Usury:
Usury covers Conscience with Fraud's cloak very
cunningly.

CONSCIENCE.

Alas! who loads my shoulders with this heavy
weed?
Fie! how it stinks: this is perfum'd indeed.

FRAUD.

Marry, gup, Goody Conscience! indeed I do you
wrong,
But I'll quickly right it; my cloak shall not cumber
you long.

USURY.

All this while Lucre knows not I am here,
But now will I to her; mark how I speed!
Lady, the fairest that Nature ever form'd,
Loadstone of love, that draws affection's darts,
The only object of all humane eyes,
And sole desired dainty of the world,
Thy vassal here, a virtue in thy need,
Whom thou by licence of the law may'st use,
Tenders himself and all his services

To do thy will in duty as 'tofore,
Glad of thy freedom as his proper life.

SIMPLICITY.

Lady Lucre, you love an apple: take heed the
caterpillar consume not your fruit.

LUCRE.

Who is it that maketh this latest suit ?

SIMPLICITY.

'Tis Usury.

[Aloud in her ear.]

LUCRE.

Great is the service he hath done for me ;
But, Usury, now I may not deal with thee.

USURY.

The law allows me, madam, in some sort.

CONSCIENCE.

But God and I would have thy bounds cut short.

USURY.

For you I reckon not ; but if God me hate,
Why doth the law allow me in some rate ?

CONSCIENCE.

Usury slanders both law and state.
The law allows not, though it tolerate,
And thou art sure be shut out at heaven-gate.

USURY.

You were ever nice : no matter what you prate.

SIMPLICITY.

Then it will be with him, as it is with a great man's house in dinner-time ! he that knocks, when the door is shut, comes too late.

LUCRE.

Well, Usury, Fraud, and Simony,
Dissimulation, hearken unto me.
My tongue (although in memory it be green)
Cannot declare what horrors I have seen ;
Ne can it enter into mortal ears
Unmortified : the furies' fires and fears,
The shrieks, the groans, the tortures, and the pains,
That any soul for each of you sustains—
No pen can write, how Conscience hath me
scourg'd,
When with your faults my soul she ever urg'd :
Arithmetic doth fail to number all
The plagues of Sorrow in the den of thrall.
Then tempt me not, nor trouble me no more ;
I must not use you as I did before.
If you be found within fair London's gate,
You must to prison, whence we came of late.
Conscience will accuse ye, if ye be in sight.

FRAUD.

That scurvy Conscience works us all the spite.

Enter NEMO.

USURY.

Well, Lucre, yet in thee we have delight.

DISSIMULATION.

Yonder come some : we must take our flight.

[*Exeunt OMNES.*]

SIMPLICITY.

Birds of a feather will fly together ; but when they
be taken, then are they baken.
Yonder comes a customer : I'll to my stall.
Love, Lucre, and Conscience, blindman-buff to you
all.

NEMO.

Conscience, Love, Lucre, ladies all, what cheer ?
How do ye like the seats you sit upon ?

CONSCIENCE.

O pure unspotted Nemo, sole paragon
Of Love, of Conscience and perfection ;
The marble of remorse I sit upon
Sweats scalding drops, like bitter brinish tears.

NEMO.

So should remorse, when Conscience feels her guilt.
But, gentle Love, how feelest thou thy flint ?

LOVE.

O, sharp and cold : I freeze unto my seat :
The flint holds fire, and yet I feel no heat,
But am benumb'd and frozen every joint.

NEMO.

O Love, so cold is charity in these times.
Lucre, how sit you ?

LUCRE.

Upon a heavy stone, not half so cold, not half so
hot as theirs,
But of some secret power, for I do find and sensibly feel,

That I from it exhale an earthly cold,
And it from me doth draw a kindly heat.

NEMO.

Such force hath care of Lucre in itself
To cool the heart and draw the vital spirits ;
And such the true condition of you three ;
Remorse of Conscience, Charity of Love,
And Care of Lucre ; such your uses be.
But, ladies, now your sorrow lay aside :
Frolic, fair dames ; an unexpected good
Is imminent through me unto you all.
Three lords there be, your native countrymen,
In London bred, as you yourselves have been,
Which covet you for honourable wives,
And presently will come to visit you.
Be not abashed at your base attire,
I shall provide you friends to deck you all.
If I command, stand up, else sit you still.
Lo, where they come.

Enter the three Lords.

My lords, the dames be here.

POLICY.

Why are they wimpled ? ¹ Shall they not unmask
them ?

¹ The wimple is generally explained as a covering for the neck, or for the neck and shoulders; but Shakespeare ("Love's Labour's Lost," act iii. sc. 1) seems to use it as a covering for the eyes also, when he calls Cupid "This wimpled, whining, purblind, wayward boy." Steevens in his note states that "the wimple was a hood or veil, which fell over the face." The passage in our text, and what follows it, supports this description of the wimple.

NEMO.

It is for your sake ; for Policy they do it.

POMP.

Much may their fortune and their feature be,
But what it is we cannot thus discern.

NEMO.

You shall in time, Lord Pomp ; be yet content.

PLEASURE.

Their fame is more than cause or reason would.
May one of these be Pleasure's paragon ?

NEMO.

Pleasure, be pleas'd and use no prejudice.
Mesdames, stand up. Mislike not their attire ;
That shall be mended as yourselves desire.

POLICY.

Their port and their proportion well contents.

POMP.

Right stately dames, if they were well attir'd.

PLEASURE.

May we not see their beauty, what it is ?

NEMO.

Yes, lordings, yes. Lucre, lift up thy veil.

POLICY.

Of beauty excellent !

POMP.

Of rare perfection !

PLEASURE.

A dainty face !

NEMO.

Unmask, Love.

POLICY.

Sweet Love indeed !

POMP.

A lovely face !

PLEASURE.

A gallant grace !

NEMO.

Conscience, uncover.

POLICY.

Beauty divine !

POMP.

A face angelical !

PLEASURE.

Sweet creature of the world !

NEMO.

Enough for once ; ladies, sit down again.

As cunning chapmen do by curious wares,

[To the audience.]

Which seldom shown do most inflame the mind,

So must I deal, being dainty of these dames,

Who seldom seen shall best allure these lords.

Awhile, my lords, I leave you with these three :

Converse, confer on good conditions.

I will right soon return with such good friends

As it concerns to clothe these dainty ones.

If any in my absence visit them,
Know their intent, and use your skill therein.

[*Exit.*]

POLICY.

Ladies, to call to mind your former lives,
Were to recount your sorrows on a row.
Omitting, then, what you have been or be,
What you may be I'll speak, so it please you ;
Wives to us three, ladies to London lords,
Pomp, Pleasure, Policy, men of such regard,
As shall you guard from evil, once matched with us ;
And Policy presents this good to you.

POMP.

With London's Pomp may one of you be join'd,
Possessing more than Fortune can afford :
Fortune's a fool, but heavenly providence
Guards London's Pomp and her that shall be his.

PLEASURE.

And London's Pleasure, peerless in delights,
Will deign to make one of these dames his own,
Who may with him in more contentment live,
Than ever did the Queen of Cæthiop.

CONSCIENCE.

Though silence, lords, our modesty enforce,
Nemo can tell the secrets of our thoughts :
Nemo, that womens' minds can constant keep,
He shall for us you answer, good my lords.
I speak for all, though ill-beseeming me.

Enter FALSEHOOD and DOUBLE-DEALING.

POLICY.

You speak but well. My lords, step we aside
To note these fellows, what they do intend.

Enter NEMO.

POMP.

Nemo can tell, for he doth follow them.

FALSEHOOD.

Ladies, to you—to some of you—we come,
Sent from such friends as much affect your good,
With garments and with compliments of cost,
Accordant well to dames of such degree—
I come to Lucre.

DOUBLE-DEALING.

I to Love am sent,
With no less cost than could be got for coin,
Which with my message I deliver would,
Could I discern which of these dames were she.

LOVE.

Friend, I am Love : what bringest thou there to
me ?

CONSCIENCE.

Beware, good Love, from whom, and what, thou
takest.

NEMO.

No whispering, friend, but show it openly :
The matter good, you need not be ashamed.
From whom comest thou ?

DOUBLE-DEALING.

That I conceal from any but from Love.

NEMO.

From whom come you, sir ?

VOL. VI.

2 E

FALSEHOOD,

That shall Lucre know, and none but she.

NEMO.

Then speak aloud, for whispering here is barr'd.

FALSEHOOD.

Then neither will I do, nor speak at all.

NEMO.

Then I will speak, and tell what you are both.
Thyself art Falsehood, and are sent from Fraud,
To compass Lucre with a cloak of craft,
With lawn of lies, and cauls of golden guile.

POLICY.

Pack you, my friend ; for if you stay a while,
You shall return no more to him that sent you.

NEMO.

Thou from Dissimulation art sent,
And bring'st a gown of glosing, lin'd with lust,
A vardingale¹ of vain boast and fan of flattery,
A ruff of riot and a cap of pride ;
And Double-dealing is thy name and office both.

DOUBLE-DEALING:

Falschood, let's go : we are deciphered.

¹ This is the only part of female dress mentioned in this speech that seems to require a note. The "vardingale (or farthingale) of vain boast" is peculiarly appropriate, since a farthingale consisted of a very wide, expanded skirt, puffed out to show off the attire, and distort the figure of a lady. In modern times it bears a different name.

FALSEHOOD.

Lucre, thou lovest here a princely gift.

[Exeunt ambo.]

NEMO.

Lucre consumes, being won by Fraud or shift.
Thus, lords, you see how these are qualified,
And how these ladies shun that sharp rebuke,
Which some deserve by taking of such toys,
As women weak are tempted soon with gifts.
But here they come, that must these ladies deck.
Lucre, arise ; come from the stone of Care.

Enter HONEST INDUSTRY, PURE ZEAL, and
SINCERITY.

HONEST INDUSTRY.

Fair Lucre, lo, what Honest Industry
To thee hath brought, to deck thy dainty self.
Lucre, by Honest Industry achiev'd,
Shall prosper, flourish, and continue long.
Come to thy chamber, to attire thee there.

NEMO.

Thou mayest depart with Honest Industry.

[Exit LUCRE *with* HONEST INDUSTRY.

PURE ZEAL.

And, Love, arise from Charity's cold flint :
Pure Zeal hath purchas'd robes to cover Love.
Whiles Love is single, Zeal shall her attire,
With kind affection mortifying lust.
Come, Love, with me these garments to put on.

NEMO.

Love, follow Zeal, and take his ornaments.

[Exit LOVE *with* PURE ZEAL.

SINCERITY.

Rise, Conscience, from that marble of Remorse,
That weeping stone that scalds thy parched skin :
Sincerity such robes for thee hath brought,
As best beseems good Conscience to adorn.
Come, follow, that thou may'st go put them on ;
For Conscience, clothed by Sincerity,
Is armed well against the enemy.

NEMO.

Follow him, Conscience : fear not ; thou art right.
[*Exit* CONSCIENCE *with* SINCERITY.]

POLICY.

Most reverend Nemo, thanks for this good sight.
Lucre is clothed by Honest Industry.

POMP.

Love by Pure Zeal.

PLEASURE.

And Conscience by Sincerity.

NEMO.

Lordings, thus have you seen them at the first,
And thus you see them, trust me, at the worst.
Depart we now : come hence a day or two,
And see them deck'd as dainty ladies should,
And make such choice as may content you all.

POLICY.

Thanks, righteous Nemo. We, the London lords,
Only to thee ourselves acknowledge bound.
[*Exeunt omnes.*]

Enter PAINFUL PENURY and SIMPLICITY.

PENURY.

Come on, gentle husband ; let us lay our heads together, our purses together, and our reckonings together, to see whether we win or lose, thrive or not, go forward or backward. Do you keep a book or a score ?

SIMPLICITY.

A score, wife ? you mean for the alehouse, do you not ? I would have her examine me thereof no further, for I am in too far there, more than I would she should know. *[Aside.*

PENURY.

I mean no alehouse-score, but a note of your wares. Let me see : first you began to set up with a royal. How much money have ye ? What ware, and what gain ?

SIMPLICITY.

I have five shillings in money, two shillings in wares, or thereabout, and I owe two shillings and eightpence upon the score ; how much is that ? Five shillings, two shillings, and two shillings and eightpence ?

PENURY.

That is nine shillings and eightpence : so we are worse by a groat than when we began. Well, once again I'll set ye up : here is four groats I have got by bearing water this week : make up your stock, and run no more behind. Who comes here ?

Enter FRAUD, like [a foreign] artificer.

SIMPLICITY.

What lack ye ? What do ye lack ?

FRAUD.

Me lack-a de monish pour de feene—very feene—French knack, de feene gold button, de brave bugla lace, a de feene gold ring-a. You be free man, me un' foreigner : you buy a me ware, you gain teene pownd by lay out teene shellengs.

SIMPLICITY.

Wife, what hard luck have we, that cannot make ten shillings now to gain ten pound. Why, ten pound would set us up for ever.

PENURY.

Husband, see the ware ; and if ten shilling will buy it, it shall go hard but we will make that money. Friend, show my husband your wares.

FRAUD.

Look you dere, mastra, de feene buttoon de la gold, de ring-a de gold, de bugla shean : two shelleng un doozen de buttoon, un shelleng-a un ring. 'Tis worth ten shelleng, but, mastra and mastressa, me muss a make money to go over in my own countrey, but me lose teen pound pour hast to go next tide, or to-morrow.

PENURY.

Here is five shillings ; buy them of this stranger.

SIMPLICITY.

Friend, you have not stolen them, but you make

them? Well, I'll buy them in the open market, and then I care not; here is ten shillings; deliver me the wares.

FRAUD.

Dere, mastra! O, pover necessity mak a me sell pour grand, grand loss: you shall gain ten pound at least. Go' boy.¹

SIMPLICITY.

What's your name?

FRAUD.

Merchant, I think I am even with ye now for calling me ostler. You'll thrive well with such bargains, if ye buy, ye know not what. Fraud hath fitted you with worse than your ballads.

[*Aside.*

PENURY.

You'll warrant them gold, sirrah?

FRAUD.

Oui; so good gol' as you pay for. [*Aside.*] Adieu, mounsier.

[*Exit.*

SIMPLICITY.

Adieu, mounsier. Adieu, fool: sell such gold buttons and rings for so little money. Good Lord! what pennyworths these strangers can afford. Now, wife, let me see: ten pound! when we have ten pound, we'll have a large shop, and sell all manner of wares, and buy more of these, and get ten pound more, and then ten pound, and ten pound, and twenty pound. Then thou shalt

¹ [Good-bye.]

have a taffata hat and a guarded gown, and I a gown and a new cap, and a silk doublet, and a fair hose.¹

PENURY.

I thank ye, husband. Well, till then look well to your wares, and I'll ply my waterbearing, and save and get, and get and save, till we be rich. But bring these wares home every night with ye.

SIMPLICITY.

Tush! I shall sell them afore night for ten pounds. Gow, wife, gow; I may tell you,² I am glad this French fellow came with these wares: we had fall'n to examining the ale-score else, and then we had fall'n out, and the ale-wife and my wife had scolded. [*Aside.*] Well, a man may see, he that's ordained to be rich shall be rich: gow, woman. [*Exeunt.*]

Enter NEMO and the three LORDS as though they had been chiding.

NEMO.

From whence, good lords, grew this hot argument?

POLICY.

Thou knowest already; yet, if thou wilt hear,
For this we strive: fond Pleasure makes account,
Summing his bills without an auditor,³
That Lady Lucre ought of right be his.

¹ [Old copy, *house*; but Simplicity is enumerating the new articles of attire he proposed to purchase.]

² [He addresses the audience.]

³ [Old copy, *auditorie*.]

PLEASURE.

So I affirm, and so I will maintain,
That Pleasure ought by right Dame Lucre have,
To bear the charge of sports and of delights.

POMP.

Nay, to support the haughty magnificence
And lordly Pomp of London's excellence
Befits it rather Lucre join with me,
By whom her honour shall be more advanced.

POLICY.

More fit for Pomp than Pleasure; but most fit
That Policy with Lucre should be matched,
As guerdon of my studies and my cares,
And high employments in the commonwealth.

PLEASURE.

What pleasure can be fostered without cost?

POMP.

What pomp or port without respect of gain?

POLICY.

What policy without preferment lives?

PLEASURE.

Pleasure must have Lucre.

POMP.

Pomp hath need of Lucre.

POLICY.

Policy merits Lucre.

PLEASURE.

Pleasure dies without Lucre.

POMP.

Pomp decays without Lucre.

POLICY.

Policy droops without Lucre.

NEMO.

Thus, lords, you show your imperfections,
Subject to passions, straining honour's bounds.
Be well-advis'd : you promised to be rul'd,
And have those dames by me disposed to you,
But since I see that human humours oft
Makes men forgetful of their greater good,
Be here a while : Dame Lucre shall be brought
By me to choose which lord she liketh best,
So you allow her choice with patience.

PLEASURE.

Go : we abide thy doom till thy return. [*Exit.*

POMP.

If Lucre be not mad, she will be mine.

POLICY.

If she regard her good, she will be mine.

PLEASURE.

If she love happy life, she will be mine :
Women love Pleasure.

POMP.

Women love Pomp.

POLICY.

Women use Policy : and here she comes that must decide the doubt.

Enter NEMO, with CONSCIENCE all in white.

NEMO.

Conscience, content thee with a quaint conceit :
Conceal thy name to work a special good.
Thou art not known to any of these lords
By face or feature : till they hear thy name,
Which must be Lucre for a fine device,
And Conscience clear indeed's the greatest gain.
[*Aside.*
Lo, lordings, here fair Lucre whom ye love.
Lucre, the choice is left unto thyself,
Which of these three thou wilt for husband choose.

CONSCIENCE.

The modesty that doth our sex beseem
Forbids my tongue therein to tell my thought ;
But may it please my lords to pardon me,
Which of you three shall deign to make such
choice,
Him shall I answer to his own content.

POLICY.

If Lucre please to match with Policy,
She shall be mistress over many men.

POMP.

If Lucre like to match with London's Pomp,
In stately port all others she shall pass.

PLEASURE.

If Pleasure may for wife fair Lucre gain,
Her life shall be an earthly paradise.

NEMO.

Lo, Lucre ! men, and port, and pleasant life,
Are here propounded. Which wilt thou accept ?

CONSCIENCE.

Lord Policy, Love were the only choice,
Methinks, for you, that all your cares employ,
And studies for the love of commonwealth.
For you, Lord Pleasure, Conscience were a wife
To measure your delights by reason's rule :
In recreation Conscience' help to use.

PLEASURE.

Were Conscience half so sweet as is thyself,
Her would I seek with suits and services.

NEMO.

No less accomplished in perfection
Is Conscience than this lady, I protest.

PLEASURE.

But on this dame hath Pleasure fix'd his heart,
And this or death the period of his love.

CONSCIENCE.

Lucre with Pomp most aptly might combine.

PLEASURE !

Lucre or Love, if case thou wilt be mine,
Let pass thy name : thyself do I desire.

Thee will I have, except thyself deny ;
With thee to live, or else for thee to die.

NEMO.

What, if I deny ?

PLEASURE.

Then will I have her.

POLICY.

If we deny ?

PLEASURE.

So much the rather.

POMP.

The rather in despite of us ? Not so.

NEMO.

My lords, no quarrel : let this lady go ;
And if ye trust me, I'll content ye both.
Pleasure, this is not Lucre.

PLEASURE.

She's Lucre unto me ;
But be she Love or Conscience, this is she——

POLICY.

—whom you will have ?

PLEASURE.

Spite of the devil, I will.

CONSCIENCE.

Must it not be, my lord, if I agree ?

PLEASURE.

Agree.

CONSCIENCE.

Some further proof of it fits¹ you to see.

PLEASURE.

Receive in² pawn my heart, my hand, and oath
To be thy own in love, in faith, and troth.

CONSCIENCE.

Thus you are fast, and yet myself am free.

PLEASURE.

I know in ruth thou wilt not me refuse.

CONSCIENCE.

I know not that ; but other I'll not choose.

NEMO.

It is enough : Lord Pleasure, do not fear :
Conscience will use you as becomes her best.

PLEASURE.

And art thou Conscience ? welcomer to me
Than either Love or Lucre.

CONSCIENCE.

God send grace I be !

NEMO. [*Addressing POMP and POLICY.*]

My lords, be pleas'd : ere long shall you be sped,

¹ [Old copy, *proove it fits of.*]² [Old copy, *a.*]

As much to your contents as Pleasure is.
Say but the word, myself shall soon present
Lucre and Love, well worthy such as you.

POLICY.

Right thankfully those favours we'll receive.

Enter DILIGENCE in haste.

DILIGENCE.

My lords, if your affairs in present be not great,
Greater than any, save regard of life,
Yea, even the greatest of the commonwealth,
Prepare ye to withstand a stratagem,
Such as this land nor London ever knew.
The Spanish forces,¹ lordings, are prepar'd
In bravery and boast beyond all bounds,
T' invade, to win, to conquer all this land.
They chiefly aim at London's stately Pomp,
At London's Pleasure, Wealth, and Policy,
Intending to despoil her of them all,
And over all these lovely ladies three,
Love, Lucre, Conscience, of the rarest price,²
To tyrannise and carry hardest hand.
From Spain they come with engine and intent
To slay, subdue, to triumph and torment:
Myself (so heaven would) espial of them had,
And Diligence, dear lords, they call my name.

¹ [Old copy, in the preceding line, *ever*.] This and the following lines afford a note of time, and show that the drama was written and acted during the preparation of the great Armada, and perhaps before its total defeat.

² [The old copy reads, *peerlesse, of the rarest price*, which destroys the metre. The writer probably wrote *peerless*, and then, finding it inconvenient as regarded the measure, substituted the other phrase, without striking out the first word, so that the printer inserted both.]

If you vouchsafe to credit my report,
 You do me right, and to yourselves no wrong,
 Provided that you arm you, being warn'd.

POLICY.

Diligence, thy service shall be known,
 And well rewarded. Nemo, for a time
 Conceal this dame, and live secure, unseen ;
 Let us alone, whom most it doth concern,
 To meet and match our overweening foes.

POMP.

Nemo, keep close, and Conscience, pray for us.
 Begone, and recommend us to our God.

CONSCIENCE.

My lords, if ever, show your honours now.
 Those proud, usurping Spanish tyrants come,
 To reave from you what most you do regard :
 To take away your credit and your fame :
 To raze and spoil our right-renowned town ;
 And if you Love or Lucre do regard,
 Or have of Conscience any kind of care,
 The world shall witness by this action ;
 And of the love that you to us pretend,
 In this your valour shall assurance give.
 More would I speak, but danger's in delay :
 You know my mind, and heavens record my
 thoughts,
 Which¹ I with prayers for you will penetrate,
 And will in heart be present in your fight.
 Now, Pleasure, show what you will do for me.

PLEASURE.

I will be turn'd to Pain for thy sweet sake.

¹ [Old copy, *when*.]

POLICY.

Fair Conscience, fear not, but assure thyself,
What kind affection we soever bear
To Love and Lucre in this action,
Chiefly for thee our service shall be done.

POMP.

For Conscience' sake more than for Lucre now.

POLICY.

For Love and Conscience, not despising Lucre.

PLEASURE.

Only for Conscience will I hazard all.

NEMO.

And I from hence will her convey a space,
Till you return with happy victory.

CONSCIENCE.

Farewell, my lords : for me, my lords, for me !
[*Exeunt NEMO and CONSCIENCE.*]

POLICY.

Diligence, what number may there be ?

DILIGENCE.

A mighty host, and chiefly led by three,
Who brave it out in show, as men assured
Of victory, sans venture or repulse.

POLICY.

How near be they ?
VOL. VI.

2 F

DILIGENCE.

So near, my lords, that each delay is death.
 Stand on your guard : they come as challengers
 To bruise your shields and bear away your prize,
 Mounting the seas, and measuring the land
 With strong imaginations of success.

POLICY.

Well, Diligence, go get in readiness
 Men and munition : bid our pages ply,
 To see that all our furniture be well :
 Wit, Wealth, and Will to further wars be fit.

[*Exit* DILIGENCE.]

My lords, I would I might advise ye now
 To carry, as it were, a careless regard
 Of these Castilians and their accustomed bravado.
 Lord Pomp, let nothing that's magnificent,
 Or that may tend to London's graceful state,
 Be unperform'd ; as shows and solemn feasts,
 Watches in armour, triumphs, cresset-lights,¹
 Bonfires, bells, and peals of ordnance.
 And, Pleasure, see that plays be published,
 May-games and masques, with mirth and min-
 strelsy,
 Pageants and school-feasts, bears and puppet
 plays.
 Myself will muster upon Mile-end Green,
 As though we saw, and fear'd not to be seen ;
 Which will their spies in such a wonder set,
 To see us reck so little such a foe,
 Whom all the world admires, save only we,
 And we respect our sport more than his spite,

¹ See "Henry IV.," Part I., act ii. sc. 1, respecting "burning cressets." In a note, Steevens quotes the above line in explanation of Shakespeare.

That John the Spaniard will in rage run mad,
To see us bend like oaks with his vain breath.

POMP.

In this device such liking I conceive,
As London shall not lack what Pomp can do.
And well I know that worthy citizens
Do carry minds so frank and bountiful,
As for their honour they will spare no cost :
Especially to let their enemy know,
Honour in England, not in Spain, doth grow.

PLEASURE.

And for the time that they in pleasure spend,
'Tis limited to such an honest end,
Namely, for recreation of the mind,
With no great cost, yet liberal in that kind,
That Pleasure vows with all delights he can
To do them good—till death to be their man.

POLICY.

Of Policy they trial have at large.

POMP.

Then, let us go, and each man to his charge.
[Exeunt the three Lords.]

Enter SIMPLICITY led by USURY.

SIMPLICITY.

I, sir? Why, alas! I bought them of a stranger,
an old Frenchman, for good gold, and to be worth
ten pound, for so he told me. I have good wit-
ness, for my own wife was by, and lent me part of
the money.

USURY.

And what did they cost you ?

SIMPLICITY.

Ten shillings, every penny.

USURY.

That argues you are guilty. Why, could ye buy so many rings and buttons of gold, think ye, for ten shillings ? Of whom did ye buy them ?

SIMPLICITY.

Of an old Frenchman, the old French disease take him !

USURY.

And where dwells that old Frenchman ?

SIMPLICITY.

In France, I think, for he told me he was to go over the next tide or the next day :
My wife can tell as well as I,
If ye think I lie,
For she was by.

USURY.

A good answer : he dwells in France, and you dwell here ; and for uttering copper for gold you are like to lose both your ears upon the pillory, and besides lose your freedom.

SIMPLICITY.

Nay, if I lose my ears, I care not for my freedom : keep you my freedom, so I may keep my ears. Is there no remedy for this, Master Usury ?

USURY.

None, except you can find out that old Frenchman.

SIMPLICITY.

Peradventure I can, if you'll let me go into France
to seek him.

USURY.

So we may lose you, and never see him. Nay,
that may not be.

SIMPLICITY.

Nay, good Master Usury, take all my goods, and
let me go.

*Enter FRAUD, DISSIMULATION, SIMONY,
in canvas coats like sailors.*

FRAUD.

What's the matter, Usury, that this poor knave
cries so ?

SIMPLICITY.

O Master Fraud ! speak to him to let me go.

FRAUD.

Fraud, ye villain ! call me not by my name, and
ye shall see I will speak to him to let you go free.
[*Aside.*] Usury, of all old fellowship, let this poor
knave pack, if the matter be not too heinous.

USURY.

No: fie ! his fault is odious. Look here what
stuff he would utter for gold : flat copper ; and he
say'th he bought them of an old Frenchman.

FRAUD.

But thou didst not sell them, didst thou ?

SIMPLICITY.

No, sir ; I would have but laid them to pawn for five pounds to him.

FRAUD.

That was more than they were worth. I promise thee, a foul matter. Well, thou must lose thy ware, and be glad to escape ; so, Usury, at my request ye shall let the poor man go.

USURY.

Well, for this once I will. Sirrah, get ye packing, and take heed of such a piece of work again, while ye live.

SIMPLICITY.

There is divers pieces of work in that box : pray ye, give me some of my goods again, a ring, or something.

USURY.

Not an inch, and be glad to 'scape as ye do.

SIMPLICITY.

Alas ! I am undone : there's all the wealth and stock I have.

FRAUD.

Do ye long to lose your ears ? be gone, ye foolish knave.

SIMPLICITY.

I thank ye, Master Fraud. I'll not go far, but I'll be near to hear and see what the meaning of these fellows in this canvas should be ; for I know

Fraud, Dissimulation, and Simony to be those three. Here, I think, I am unseen.

[SIMPLICITY *hides him near them.*

FRAUD.

Usury, thank me for this good booty, for it is I that help ye to it, for I sold them to him for gold indeed, in the shape of an old French artificer ; come, give me half, for I deserve it, for my part was the first beginning of this comedy. I was ever afraid lest the fool should have known me ; for ye see now, though disguis'd, he called me by my name.

SIMPLICITY.

Did I so ? I am glad I have found the Frenchman. Now, I'll raise the street, but I'll have my wares again, and prove ye, as ye were ever, both false knaves, I believe. [Exit SIMPLICITY.¹

FRAUD.

Kill him, stab him ! Out, villain ! he will betray us all.

USURY.

What a fool were you to speak before he was gone : now you have lost your part of this, too ; for he will go complain, you will be sought for, and I made to restore these things again.

FRAUD.

Not if thou be wise : thou wilt not tarry the reckoning, for seest thou not us three, Dissimulation, Simony, and myself ?

¹ [The concluding portion of the speech is supposed to be overheard by Fraud and the others.]

USURY.

Yes : what means these canvas suits ? Will ye be sailors ?

FRAUD.

Usury, make one : this is our intent. Let's see that none hear us now. The Spaniards are coming, thou hearest, with great power : here is no living for us in London ; men are grown so full of conscience and religion, that Fraud, Dissimulation, and Simony are deciphered, and being deciphered are also despised, and therefore we will slip to the sea, and meet and join with the enemy ; and if they conquer, as they may, for they are a great army by report, our credit may rise again with them : if they fail and retire, we may either go with them and live in Spain, where we and such good fellows are tolerated and used, or come slyly again hither, so long as none knows but friends.

USURY.

But will you do thus, you two ?

DISSIMULATION.

And thou too, I hope : why, what should we do ?

USURY.

Whatsoever ye do, be not traitors to your native country.

SIMONY.

'Tis not our native country, thou knowest. I, Simony, am a Roman : Dissimulation, a mongrel —half an Italian, half a Dutchman : Fraud so, too —half French and half Scottish ; and thy parents

were both Jews, though thou wert born in London, and here, Usury, thou art cried out against by the preachers. Join with us, man, to better thy state, for in Spain preaching toucheth us not.

USURY.

To better my state? Nay, to alter my state, for here, where I am, I know the government: here I can live for all their threat'ning. If strangers prevail, I know not their laws nor their usage: they may be oppressors, and take all I have; and it is like they are so, for they seek that's not their own. Therefore here will I stay, sure to keep what I have, rather than be a traitor upon hap and had-I-wist: and stay you, if ye be wise, and pray as I pray, that the preachers and all other good men may die, and then we shall flourish; but never trust to strangers' courtesy.

FRAUD.

We shall trust but to our friends and kin. You'll not go with us, yet for old acquaintance keep counsel; betray us not, for we'll be gone to sea. I am afraid yon foolish knave have belaid the streets for us.

USURY.

Let me go afore ye: if any such thing be, I'll give ye inkling. *[Exit.]*

FRAUD.

Do: farewell, Usury: and as he goes one way, we'll go another.
Follow, sirs: never trust a shrinker, if he be your own brother. *[Exeunt omnes.]*

*Enter the three Lords with their Pages and FEALTY,
a Herald, before them, his coat having the arms
of London before, and an olive tree behind.*

POLICY.

Fealty, thou faithful herald of our town,
Thou true truce-keeper and sure friend in peace,
Take down our shields, and give them to our boys.

[He delivers them.]

Now, Fealty, prepare thy wits for war,
To parley with the proud Castilians,
Approaching fast the frontiers of our coast.
Wit here, my page, in every message shall
Attend on thee, to note them and their deeds.
I need not tell thee, they are poor and proud :
Vaunters, vainglorious, tyrants, truce-breakers :
Envious, ireful, and ambitious.
For thou hast found their facings and their
brags,
Their backs their coffers, and their wealth their
rags ;
But let me tell thee what we crave of thee—
To scan with judgment what their leaders be,
To note their presence and observe their grace,
And truly to advertise what they seem ;
Whether to be experienced in arms,
Or men of name — those three that lead the
rest—
The rest refer we to thy own conceit.

FEALTY.

I hope in this my duty to discharge,
As heretofore——

*SIMPLICITY make a great noise within, and enter
with three or four weaponed.*

SIMPLICITY.

Clubs ! clubs !¹ Nay, come, neighbours, come,
for here they be : here I left them, arrant thieves,
rogues, coseners. I charge ye, as you will answer,
'prehend them ; for they have undone me, and robb'd
me, and made me the poorest freeman that ever
kept a ballad-stall.

A CONSTABLE.

I charge ye keep the peace, and lay down your
weapons. [To the three Lords.]

POMP.

Who rais'd this tumult ? Speak, what means
this stir ?

SIMPLICITY.

O, I am undone, robb'd, spoil'd of all my stock !
Let me see, where be they ? Keep every street
and door : 'xamine all that comes for Fraud that
cosener.

POLICY.

Masters, what mean you in these troublous times
To keep this coil ?

CONSTABLE.

Alas ! my lord, here's a poor man robb'd or
cosened.

¹ The ordinary cry of the apprentices of London, when
they wished to raise their fellows to take their part in any
commotion. It is mentioned in many old writers.

SIMPLICITY.

I am robb'd.—O my boys, my pretty boys, I am undone! Saw ye no thieves, nor no crafty knaves? What be all these?

WIT.

Simplicity, away! these be our lords; offend them not for fear.

SIMPLICITY.

I seek not them: I seek for Fraud that robb'd me.

PLEASURE.

Go, seek elsewhere, for here's no place for such.

POLICY.

My friends, depart, and qualify this stir,
And see peace kept within the walls, I charge ye.

CONSTABLE.

I will, my lord. Come, Simplicity, we came too late to find your losses.

SIMPLICITY.

Pray for me, my boys; I think I shall hang myself. I come ever too late to speed. [*Exeunt.*]

POLICY.

Now, lords, let honour's fire inflame our thoughts,
And let us arm our courage with our cause,
And so dispose ourselves to welcome them.
Do me the favour (if I may entreat)
To be the first to front the foe in face:
The vanguard let be Policy's this once,
Pomp's the main battle, Pleasure's the rearward;
And so bestow us, if you think it good.

POMP.

I think it good, and time that it were done.

PLEASURE.

I think it good, and wish the enemy come.

Enter DILIGENCE.

DILIGENCE.

And here they come, as brave as Philip's son
And his Hephæstion wont to be array'd,
In glittering gold and party-coloured plumes ;
With curious pendants on their lances fix'd,
Their shields impress'd with gilt copartiments ;
Their pages careless playing at their backs,
As if with conquest they triumphing came.

POLICY.

If they be conquer'd, greater is their shame.
But, Diligence, go post amongst the coast
To tell the news ; and look, to welcome them,
Let us alone. My lords, you hear the news :
More words were vain ; I know ye well resolv'd.
[*Exit DILIGENCE.*

POMP.

And here they come. O proud Castilians !

Enter first, SHEALTY the Herald ; then PRIDE, bearing his shield himself, his impress a Peacock ; the word Nonpareil ; his Page, SHAME, after him with a lance, having a pendant gilt, with this word in it, Sur le Ciel. AMBITION, his impress a black horse saliant, with one hinder-foot upon the globe of the earth, one fore-foot stretching towards the clouds, his word Non sufficit orbis ; his Page, TREACHERY, after him, his pendant argent and azure, an armed

arm catching at the sunbeams, the word in it Et gloriam Phœbi. Last, TYRANNY, his impress a naked child on a spear's-point, bleeding; his word Pour sangue; his Page, TERROR, his pendant gules, in it a tiger's head out of a cloud, licking a bloody heart; the word in it Cura cruor. March once about the stage, then stand and view the Lords of London, who shall march towards them, and they give back; then the Lords of London wheel about to their standing, and th' other come again into their places. Then POLICY sends FEALTY; their Herald's coat must have the arms of Spain before, and a burning ship behind.

POLICY.

My lords, what mean these gallants to perform?
 Come these Castilian cowards but to brave?
 Do all these mountains move to breed a mouse?
 Fealty, go fetch their answer resolute,
 How they dare be so bold, and what
 They dare do here.

[As FEALTY is going toward them, they send forth SHEALTY.]

SHEALTY.

What wouldst thou, herald?

FEALTY.

Parley with those three, herald.

SHEALTY.

They scorn to grace so mean a man as thou
 With parley or with presence.

FEALTY.

Do they scorn?

What, are thy masters monarchs every one?
Or be they gods? or rather be they devils?
Scorn they a herald's presence and his speech?
Name them, that I may know their mightiness,
And so avoid of duties some neglect.

SHEALTY.

Monarchs in minds, and gods in high conceits,
That scorn you English as the scum of men,
Whom I ne dare without their licence name,
'Fore whom thy duties all are few and base.

FEALTY.

Imperious Spaniard, do a herald right:
Thyself art one; their trouchman¹ if thou be,
Be thou my trump,² that I my message may
Through thee convey to them from London lords.

SHEALTY.

Base English groom, from beggars sent belike,
Who for their mate thee malapert account,
Dare I (think'st thou) these lords magnificent,
Without their special pleasure understood,
Once move with message or with show of speech?

FEALTY.

More servile thou to lose a herald's due,
That is in field a king's companion.
But if thou dare not my ambassage do,
Stand by, and stop not my access to them.

¹ A trouchman was an interpreter [literally, a truceman]:
"For he that is the Troughman of a Straungers tongue
may well declare his meaning, but yet shall marre the
grace of his Tale" (G. Whetstone's "Heptameron," 1582).

² [Old copy, *trunke*.]

SHEALTY.

Rather will I return, and know their minds.

[When SHEALTY goes to them, WIT goes to the three Lords of London.]

POLICY.

Now, boy, what news ?

WIT.

The fearful herald of yon famous crew
Durst not your message to his masters tell,
Till Fealty with contumelious words
(Yet was the Spaniard brave and hot in terms)
Enforced him for their answer resolute.
[The Spaniards whisper with their Herald.]

POMP.

Which now, belike, our herald shall receive ;
For theirs comes to him.

SHEALTY.

It pleaseth them to be magnificent,
And of their special graces to vouchsafe
A counterview of pages and of shields,
And countermessage by us heralds done ;
A favour which they seldom grant to foes.
Go thou for those ; I meet thee will with these.

FEALTY.

My lords, yon braving Spaniards wish
A counterview of pages and of shields,
But what they mean or be, I know not yet.
Haply you may by their impresses view,
Or I by parley some conjecture give,
So please it you your pages and your shields
With me to send : their herald comes with theirs.

POLICY.

Our shields I reckon not, but to send our Wealth——

FEALTY.

Accompanied with Wit and Will—no peril.

POMP.

It is my Wealth ; but keep him, if they dare :
I'll fetch him double, if they do, my lords.

PLEASURE.

Boys, take our shields and spears, for they come on.

WIT.

Vail, Spaniard : couch thy lance and pendant both.
Knowest where thou art ? Here will we bear no
braves.

*[When the English boys meet the other, cause
them to put down the tops of their lances, but
they beat up theirs.]*

WEALTH.

Down with your point : no loft-born lances here
By any stranger, be he foe or friend.

WILL.

Well dost thou note the couching of thy lance ;
Mine had, ere this, else gor'd your Spanish skin.

FEALTY.

Well done, my boys ; but now all reverence—

SHEALTY.

Advance again your lances now, my boys.

[Hold up again.]

S. PRIDE.

Dicito nobis ideo, qui ades, quid sibi velint
isthæc emblemata? Dicito (inquam) lingua ma-
terna: nos enim omnes bellè intelligimus, quamvis
Anglicè loqui dedignamur.

FEALTY.

Then know, Castilian cavaleros, this :
The owners of these emblems are three lords,
Those three that now are viewing of your shields :
Of London, our chief city, are they lords ;
Policy, Pomp, and Pleasure be their names ;
And they, in honour of their mistresses,
Love, Lucre, Conscience, London ladies three,
Emblazoned these scutcheons, challenging
Who durst compare or challenge one of them.
And Policy a tortoise hath impress'd,
Encompass'd with her shell, her native walls,
And *Providens securus* is his word :
His page is Wit, his mistress Lady Love.
Pomp in his shield a lily hath portray'd,
As paragon of beauty and boon-grace :
Glorie sans peere his word, and true it is ;
With London's Pomp Castile cannot compare :
His page is Wealth, his mistress Lucre hight.
Pleasure, the dainty of that famous town,
A falcon hath emblazon'd, soaring high,
To show the pitch that London's Pleasure flies :
His word *Pour temps*, yet never stops to train,
But unto Conscience, chosen for his dear :
His page is Will ; and thus th' effect you hear.

S. PRIDE.

Buena, buena, per los Lutheranos Ingleses.

FEALTY.

Mala, mala, per Catholicos Castellanos.

POLICY.

Loqueris Anglicè ?

SHEALTY.

Maximè, Domine.

POLICY.

Agendum : go to, then ; and declare
Thy lords their shields, their pages and their pur-
pose.

Speak, man ; fear not : though Spain use mes-
sengers ill,

'Tis England's guise to entreat them courteously.

SHEALTY.

Three cavalieros Castilianos here,
Without compeers in compass of this world,
Are come to conquer, as full well they shall,
This molehill isle, that little England hight,
With London, that proud paltry market-town,
And take those dames, Love, Lucre, Conscience,
Prisoners, to use or force, as pleaseth them.
The first (now quake) is Spanish Majesty,
That for his impress gives Queen Juno's bird,
Whose train is spang'd with Argus' hundred eyes ;
The Queen of Gods scorns not to grace him so :
His word is *Nonpareil*, none his like ;
Yet is his page or henchman Modesty,
Lucre the lady that shall be his prize :
And in his pendant on his lance's point
Sur le Ciel his word, Above the heavens.

POLICY.

Whilome, indeed, above the heavens he was,
Could he have kept him in that blessed state.
From thence for pride he fell to pit of pain ;
And is he now become the pride of Spain ?
And to his page, not Modesty, but Shame.
Well, on, the rest——

SHEALTY.

Don Honour is the next grand peer of Spain,
 Whose impress is a courser saliant,
 Of colour sable, darkening air and earth,
 Pressing the globe with his disdainful foot,
 And sallying to aspire to rolling skies :
Non sufficit orbis is his haughty word,
 The world sufficeth not high Honour's thoughts ;
 And on the pendant, fixed on his lance,
 A hand is catching at the sunny beams :
Et gloriam Phæbi, and the sun's bright coach
 Honour would guide, if he might have his will.
 His page is Action, tempering still with state.

POLICY.

Himself Ambition, whom the heavens do hate.

SHEALTY.

And Love the lady that he hopes to gain.

POLICY.

His thoughts, distract from foul-distempered brain,
 Proves him the very firebrand¹ of Spain :
 And in his shield his black disordered beast,
 Scaling the skies, scornful to tread the ground,
 And both his words—proud words—prove perfectly
 Action his page to be but Treachery,
 Ever attendant on Ambition.
 But to the third——

SHEALTY.

The third grand cavaliero is Government,
 Severe in justice and in judgment deep :
 His impress is a naked infant, gor'd

¹ [This is to be pronounced as a trisyllable.]

Upon a lance, signifying Severity.
His word *Pour sangue*; for blood of enemies
He bends his forces : on his pendant is
A tiger, licking of a bleeding heart ;
And *Cura cruor* is the word thereon :
His care's for blood of those that dare resist.
Yet hight his page, that follows him, Regard,
And he for Conscience to this conquest comes.

POLICY.

The Government of Spain is Tyranny,
As do his impress and his words declare :
His page is Terror ; for a tyrant fears
His death in diet, in his bed, in sleep.
In Conscience' spite, the Spanish tyranny
Hath shed a sea of most unguilty blood.
Well, what's the end ?

SHEALTY.

The end is, best you yield,
Submitting you to mercy of these lords.

POMP.

Before we fight ? soft, sir ; ye brave too fast.
Castilians, know that Englishmen will knock.
But say,
Doth Spanish Pride for London's Lucre gape ?

PLEASURE.

And would their Tyranny Conscience captive have ?

POLICY.

Doth their Ambition London's Love affect ?

SHEALTY.

All this they will, and prey upon your town,

And give your lands away before your face.
Alas ! what's England to the power of Spain ?
A molehill, to be placed where it pleaseth them.

POMP.

But in this molehill many pismires be,
All which will sting, before they be remov'd.
What is thy name ?

SHEALTY.

Shealty.

POLICY.

An Irish word, signifying liberty ;
Rather remissness, looseness, if ye will.
Why hath thy coat a burning ship behind ?

SHEALTY.

To signify the burning of your fleet
By us Castilians.

POLICY.

It rather means your commonwealth's on fire
About your ears, and you were best look home.
A commonwealth's compared to a ship :
If yours do flame, your country is hot ; beware.

FEALTY.

I see, Castilians, that you marvel much
At this same emblem of the olive-tree
Upon my back ; lo, this it signifies.
Spain is in wars ; but London lives in peace :
Your native fruit doth wither on your soil,
And prospers where it never planted was.
This London's Fealty doth avouch for truth.
Herald of war, and porter of their peace,
Command ye me no service to my lords !

S. PRIDE.

Quid tu cum dominis mox servietis miseri nobis :¹
discede.

FEALTY.

Quid mihi cum dominis servietis miseri meis !

POMP.

Shealty, say unto yon Thrasoes three,
The Lords of London dare them to the field,
Pitying their pride and their ambition,
Scorning their tyranny, and yet fearing this,
That they are come from home and dare not fight ;
But if they dare—in joint or several arms,
Battle or combat—him that Lucre seeks,
Your Spanish Pride, him dare I from the rest.

PLEASURE.

That bloody cur, your Spanish Tyranny,
That London's Conscience would force with cruelty,
I challenge him for Conscience' sake to fight
A Lord of London, and I Pleasure hight.
And, Shealty, when citizens dare them thus,
Judge what our nobles and our courtiers dare.

POLICY.

Say, if thou wilt, that London's Policy
Discerns that proud Ambition of Spain ;
And for he comes inflam'd with London's Love,
In combat let him conquer me, and have her.
This is Love's favour ; I her servant am.

POMP.

This Lucre's favour : Pomp for her will fight.

¹ [In the old copy this line is printed thus—

“ Quid tibi cum dominis mox servietis miseri nobis ; discede.”]

PLEASURE.

This Conscience' favour : she my mistress is.

SHEALTY.

You craven English on your dunghills crow.

POMP.

You Spanish pheasants crow upon your perch :
But when we fire your coats about your ears,
And take your ships before your walled towns,
We make a dunghill of your rotten bones,
And cram our chickens with your grains of gold.

SHEALTY.

You will not yield ?

PLEASURE.

Yes, the last moneth.

SHEALTY.

Farewell.

[Retire Heralds with the Pages to their places.]

S. PRIDE.

Vade.

POLICY.

Herald, how now ?

FEALTY.

Yon proud Castilians

Look for your service.

POMP.

So do we for theirs.

But, Fealty, canst thou declare to me
The cause why all their pages follow them,
When ours in show do ever go before ?

FEALTY.

In war they follow, and the Spaniard is
Warring in mind.

POLICY.

But that's not now the cause.
Yon three are Pride, Ambition, Tyranny :
Shame follows Pride, as we a proverb have ;
Pride goes before, and Shame comes after.
Treachery ever attends upon Ambition ;
And Terror always with a fearful watch
Doth wait upon ill-conscienced Tyranny.
But why stay we to give them space to breathe ?
Come, Courage ! let us charge them all at once.
*[Let the three Lords pass towards the Spaniards,
and the Spaniards make show of coming for-
ward and suddenly depart.]*

POMP.

What braving cowards these Castilians be ?
My lords, let's hang our 'scutcheons up again,
And shroud ourselves, but not far off, unseen,
To prove if that may draw them to some deed,
Be it to batter our impressed shields.

PLEASURE.

Agreed. Here, Fealty, hang them up a space.

*[They hang up their shields, and step out of
sight. The Spaniards come, and flourish their
rapiers near them, but touch them not, and
then hang up theirs ; which the Lords of
London perceiving, take their own and batter
theirs. The Spaniards, making a little show
to rescue, do suddenly slip away and come no
more.]*

POLICY.

Facing, faint-hearted, proud, and insolent,
That bear no edge within their painted sheaths,
That durst not strike our silly patient shields!

POMP.

Up have they set their own : see, if we dare
Batter on them, and beat their braving lords.

PLEASURE.

Let them not yonder hang unhack'd, my lords.

POLICY.

With good advice, that we be not surprised.

POMP.

And good enough myself will onset give¹
On Pride's. At your Peacock, sir.

PLEASURE.

At Tyranny's will I bestow my blow,
Wishing the master.

POLICY.

I at Ambition's strike. Have at his pampered jade!

Enter S. PRIDE.

S. PRIDE.

Fuoro Viliagos ! fuoro Lutheranos Ingleses ! fuoro,
sa, sa, sa !

POMP.

Their shields are ours : they fled away with shame.

¹ [In the old copy this line is divided between Policy and Pomp improperly.]

But, lordings, whiles the stratagem is fresh,
And memory of their misfortune green,
Their hearts yet fainting with the novel grief,
Let us pursue them flying : if you say it,
Haply we may prevent their passage yet.

POLICY.

With speed and heed the matter must be done.

PLEASURE.

Therefore you, Policy, shall our leader be.

[Exeunt omnes.]

Enter [the] three Ladies and NEMO.

NEMO.

The day is ours : fair ladies, let us joy
The joyful day that all men may rejoice ;
Yet only I am thankful for this good,
And your good day at hand approacheth fast,
Wherein you shall be join'd to three such lords,
As all the cities under heaven's bright cope
Cannot with all their glory match in worth.
Lucre, Lord Pomp a victor comes to thee :
Love, look thou for Lord Policy as well ;
And Conscience for her well-reformed phere,
Pleasure, that only made his choice of her.
Upon that day triumphant shall we feast,
Wherein, mesdames, your honours nill be least.

LUCRE.

Against their coming, might my reed be heard,¹
Prepare would we garlands of laurel green,
To welcome them ; more for the common good,
Than for affection private that we bear.

¹ [Might my advice be heard.]

LOVE.

To meet them coming will not be amiss ;
But what know we, how they will take such work ?

CONSCIENCE.

Report may be much more than there is cause.
We may them meet and greet with joyful hearts,
And make them garlands, when we know their
minds.

Enter the three Lords, with the Spanish shields, and

DILIGENCE.

NEMO.

And here they come with new-impressed shields.—
My lords, well-met, and welcome from your foes.

LUCRE.

Lord Pomp, well-met, and welcome home again.

LOVE.

Lord Policy, well-met, and welcome home again.

CONSCIENCE.

Lord Pleasure, welcome with unfeigned heart.

PLEASURE.

Fair joy and lady, twenty thousand thanks.

POLICY.

Fair Love and lady, twice as many thanks.

POMP.

Fair and beloved Lucre, though I speak last,

As kindly I thy welcome do accept,
As heart can think, pen write, or tongue can tell.

NEMO.

Now speak, my lords, how have ye sped ?

POLICY.

Right well ; thanks unto Him that gave the day
to us.

The Pride of Spain was cloak'd with majesty,
And Shame, his page, nicknamed Modesty :
Spanish Ambition Honour would be call'd,
And Treachery, his page, term'd Action :
Their Tyranny was cleped Government ;
Terror, his page, was falsely nam'd Regard ;
But God above hath given them their reward.
They with dishonour left their shields behind,
The only prizes purchas'd by us now,
And those, fair ladies, we present to you.
Love, this is thine, and he that gives it thee.

NEMO.

In lieu whereof your gift and her I give
Again to you, that merit more than both.

POLICY.

The greatest gift and good could me befall.

POMP.

Fair Lucre, lo, my present and myself.

LUCRE.

Which I, with Nemo's license, gladly take.

NEMO.

Take her, Lord Pomp ; I give her unto thee,
Wishing your good may ten times doubled be.

POMP.

The richest ¹ good this world could give to me.

PLEASURE.

Of duty I, my dear, must give thee this :
That art my comfort and my earthly bliss.

NEMO.

Now, lords, I hope you are contented all :
Pomp with his Lucre, Policy with Love,
Pleasure with Conscience : joy fall you from above.
And thus to you my promise is perform'd,
And I expect that yours as well be kept,
That present preparation may be made
To honour those with holy marriage rites,
That I, in presence of the world, may give
These as my daughters unto you my sons.

POLICY.

By my consent one day shall serve us all,
Which shall be kept for ever festival.

POMP.

And on that day, in honour of these dames,
These shields in triumph shall be borne about.

PLEASURE.

With pageants, plays, and what delights may be,
To entertain the time and company.

¹ [Old copy, *wished.*]

NEMO.

So it please you, lordings, methinks it were meet,
That the ladies took care to provide their own toys.
Myself need to help them, who know their minds
well,
For I can keep women both quiet and constant.

POLICY.

It pleaseth us well that you will take the pains.
Fair ones, for a while ye¹ betake you to your
business.

POMP.

Ladies, adieu.

PLEASURE.

Beloved, farewell.

*[The Lords bring them to the door, and they go
out [FRAUD and DISSIMULATION enter dis-
guised], and FRAUD² gives POLICY a paper,
which he reads, and then says:]*

POLICY.

It seems by this writing, sir, you would serve me.
Is your name Skill? whom did you serve last?

FRAUD.

An ill master, my lord: I served none but myself.

POLICY.

Have ye never served any heretofore?

FRAUD.

Yes, divers, my lord, both beyond sea and here.

¹ [Old copy, *we.*]

² [Old copy, *Ne. Fra.*, *Nemo* being retained by error.]

With your patience, my good lord, not offending the same, I think I am your poor kinsman : your lordship, Policy, and I Skill, if it like ye.

POLICY.

You say very well, and it is very like.
I will answer ye anon.

[DISSIMULATION gives PLEASURE a paper,
which he reads, and says :

PLEASURE.

Is your name Fair Semblance, that wish to serve me ?

DISSIMULATION.

Please your lordship, Fair Semblance. I am well-seen, though I say it, in sundry languages meet for your lordship, or any noble service, to teach divers tongues and other rare things.

PLEASURE.

I like ye very well ; stay a while for your answer.

Enter USURY, and gives a paper to POMP, which he reads, and saith :

POMP.

Master Usury, I thank ye that ye offer me your service ; it seems to me to be for your old mistress' sake, Lady Luere. Stay but a while ; I will answer you with reason.

[*The three Lords go together and whisper, and call DILIGENCE. DILIGENCE goes out for a marking-iron, and returns.*

FRAUD.

How now, my hearts, think ye we shall speed ?

[*Aside.*]

POLICY.

Diligence, come hither.

USURY.

I cannot tell what you shall, but I am sure I shall.

[*Aside.*]

DISSIMULATION.

I am as like as any of ye both.

USURY.

Fraud !

DISSIMULATION.

Whist, man ; he's Skill.

[*Aside.*]

USURY.

Skill, why dost thou seek to serve Lady Love ?
What profit will that be ?

FRAUD.

Tut, hold thee content : I'll serve but a while,
and serve mine own turn, and away.

POMP.

Master Usury, come hither. You desire to serve me : you have done Lady Lucre good service, you say, but it was against God and Conscience you did it : neither ever in your life did ye anything for Love. Well, to be short, serve me you shall not ; and I would I could banish you from London for ever, or keep you close prisoner ; but that is

VOL. VI.

2 H

not in me ; but what is, or may be, that straight you shall see. By Policy's counsel this shall be done. Diligence, bring that iron. Help me, my lords.¹

POLICY.

Give me the iron. Pomp, Cousin Skill, help to hold him.

[FRAUD *lays hold on him, but DISSIMULATION slip away.*

Sirrah, Policy gives you this mark, do you see ;
A little x standing in the midst of a great C,
Meaning thereby to let men understand,
That you must not take above bare ten pound in
the hundred at any hand :
And that too much too ; and so be packing quietly,
And know that London's Pomp is not sustained
by Usury,
But by well-ventured merchandise and honest
industry.

USURY.

I would I had never seen ye, if this be your
courtesy. [Exit USURY.

POLICY.

Now, Cousin Skill, *alias* Filthy Fraud,
No kinsman to Policy, nor friend to the state :
Instead of serving me, Diligence, take him to New-
gate.
Ask me not why, sir : but, Diligence, if he do
strive,
Raise the street : he's unweaponed, and thou hast
a weapon on.—
And now, lords, when ye will, about our affairs
let's be gone.

¹ [The entrance of Diligence is marked here in old copy ;
but he was already on the stage.]

PLEASURE.

Agreed ; but what's become of Fair-semlance, my man ?

POMP.

A crafty villain, perceiving how we meant to Usury, slipt away.

Enter SIMPLICITY in haste, and give the Lords a paper to read.

SIMPLICITY.

All hail, all rain, all frost, and all snow
Be to you three Lords of London on a row !
Read my supplantation, and my suit ye shall know,
Even for God's sake above, and three ladies' sakes below.

FRAUD.

Master Diligence, do me a favour : you know I am a gentleman.

DILIGENCE.

Step aside, till my lords be gone ; I'll do for you what I can. *[Slip aside.]*

POMP.

What's here, my boy, what's here ? Pleasure, this suit is, sure, to you ; for it's mad stuff, and I know not what it means.

PLEASURE.

Neither do I. Sirrah, your writing is so intricate, that you must speak your mind ; otherwise we shall not know your meaning.

POLICY.

You sue for three things here, and what be they? tell them.

SIMPLICITY.

Cannot you three tell, and the suit to you three? I am glad a simple fellow yet can go beyond you three great Lords of London. Why, my suit, look ye, is such a suit, as you are bound in honour to hear, for it is for the puppet-like¹ wealth. I would have no new orders nor new sciences set up in the city, whereof I am a poor freeman, and please ye, as ye may read in my bill there—Simplicity freeman. But, my lords, I would have three old trades, which are not for the commonwealth, put down.

PLEASURE.

And after all this circumstance, sir, what be they?

SIMPLICITY.

They be not three what-lack-ye's, as what do ye lack? fine lockram,² fine canvas, or fine Holland cloth, or what lack ye? fine ballads, fine sonnets, or what lack ye? a purse, or a glass, or a pair of fine knives? but they be three have-ye-any's, which methinks are neither sciences nor occupations; and if they be trades, they are very malapart trades—and more than reason.

POLICY.

As how, sir? name them.

¹ [Simplicity seems to intend the public-wealth.]

² [An intentional (?) error for *buckram*.]

SIMPLICITY.

Will you banish them as readily as I can name them? The first is, have ye any old iron, old mail, or old harness?

POMP.

And what fault find ye with this?

SIMPLICITY.

What fault? I promise ye, a great fault: what have you, or any man else, to do to ask me if I have any old iron? What, if I have, or what, if I have not; why should you be so saucy to ask?

PLEASURE.

Why, fool, 'tis for thy good to give thee money for that that might lie and rust by thee.

SIMPLICITY.

No, my lord, no; I may not call you fool: it is to mark the houses where such stuff is that, against rebels rise, there is harness and weapon ready for them in such and such houses; and what then? The rusty weapon doth wound past surgery, and kills the queen's good subjects; and the rest of the old trash will make them guns too: so it is good luck to find old iron, but 'tis naught to keep it, and the trade is crafty. And now, my Lord Policy, I speak to you, 'twere well to put it down.

POLICY.

Wisely said. Which is your second? Is that as perilous?

SIMPLICITY.

Yea, and worse. It is, have ye any ends of gold and silver? This is a perilous trade, covetous, and

a 'tice ment to murder ; for, mark ye, if they that ask this should be evil-given, as Gods forbod, they see who hath this gold and silver : may they not come in the night, break in at their houses, and cut their throats for it ? I tell ye, gold and silver hath caused as much mischief to be done as that : down with it.

POMP.

They that have it need not show it.

SIMPLICITY.

Tush ! they need ask no such question : many a man hath delight to show what he hath. The trade is a 'ticing trade ; down with it.'

POLICY.

Now, your third, sir ?

SIMPLICITY.

That is the craftiest of all, wherein I am disbus'd, for that goes under the colour of Simplicity : have ye any wood to cleave ?

PLEASURE.

A perilous thing : what hurt is there in this, sir ?

SIMPLICITY.

O, do you not perceive the subtlety ? Why, sir, the woodmongers hire these poor men to go up and down, with their beetles and wedges on their backs, crying, Have ye any wood to cleave ? and laugh to see them travel so loaden with wood and iron. Now, sir, if the poor men go two or three days, and are not set a-work (as sometimes they do), the woodmongers pay them, and gain by it,

for then know they there's no wood in the city : then raise they the price of billets so high, that the poor can buy none. Now, sir, if these fellows were barr'd from asking whether there were any wood to cleave or not, the woodmongers need not know but that there were wood, and so billets and faggots would be sold all at one rate. Down with this trade : we shall sit a-cold else, my lords.

PLEASURE.

I promise you, a wise suit, and done with great discretion.

SIMPLICITY.

Yea, is it not? might ye not do well to make me of your council? I believe I could spy more faults in a week than you could mend in a month.

POLICY.

Well, for these three faults, the time serves not now to redress.

SIMPLICITY.

No, marry ; for you three must be married suddenly, and your feast must be dress'd.

POMP.

Against which feast repair you to Diligence, and he shall appoint you furniture and money, and a place in the show : till when, farewell.

SIMPLICITY.

Farewell, my lords : farewell, my three lords ; and remember that I have set each of ye a fault to mend. Well, I'll go seek Master Diligence, that he may give me forty pence against the feast, sir reverence.

[Exit.

DILIGENCE and FRAUD *step out.*¹

DILIGENCE.

What is it, Master Fraud, ye would demand of me?

FRAUD.

Sir, this you know, though yourself be a man of good reckoning, yet are ye known an officer unto these three lords, and what discredit it were to me, being a noted man, to pass through the streets with you, being an officer; or if any of my friends should suspect me with you, and dog us, and see me committed to Newgate, I were utterly discredited. Here is a purse, sir, and in it two hundred angels: look, sir; you shall tell them.

DILIGENCE.

Here are so indeed. What mean ye by this? I will not take these to let ye escape.

[*Deliver FRAUD the purse again.*]

FRAUD.

I mean not so, sir; nor I will not give half of them to be suffered to escape; for I have done none offence, though it please them to imprison me, and it is but on commandment.² I shall not stay long; but I will give you this purse and gold in pawn to be true prisoner, only give me leave to go some other way, and home to my lodging for my boots and other necessities; for there I'll leave word I am ridden out of town, and with all the

¹ They "slipped aside" on p. 483, and now re-enter. The preceding stage direction ought to be *Exeunt*, because the lords go out as well as Simplicity.

² [Committal, prior to trial.]

haste that possibly I may, I will meet you at Newgate, and give you an angel for your courtesy. There is the purse.

[FRAUD gives him a purse like the other.]

DILIGENCE.

I hazard, as you know, my lords' displeasure herein ; and yet, to pleasure you, I will venture this once ; but, I pray ye, make haste, that I be not shent. I would not for ten angels it were known.

FRAUD.

If I tarry above an hour, take that gold for your tarrying. [Exit.]

DILIGENCE.

I do not fear that you'll forfeit so much for so little cause. [Exit.]

Enter NEMO, with DESIRE, DELIGHT, and DEVOTION, the three Lords of Lincoln.

NEMO.

My Lords of Lincoln,
Have you such title and such interest
To Love, Lucre, and Conscience as you say ?
Who gave you leave to have access to them ?
I am their father by adoption :
I never knew of love 'twixt them and you ;
And to perpetual prison they were doom'd,
From whence I only might deliver them :
Which at the suit of three most matchless lords,
Their countrymen, in London bred as they,
I have perform'd, and freed them from their bonds ;
And yet have bound them in their freedom too,
To Policy, to Pleasure, and to Pomp,
Three Lords of London, whose they are in right,

Contracted wives, and done by my consent ;
And even to-morrow is the marriage-day,
Except your coming stay, or break it off.
I will go call their lords to answer *you* :
They (under covert-baron ¹) *meddle* not. [Exit.

DESIRE.

Fetch them, Lord Nemo : we will here attend.

DELIGHT.

Attend we may, but unto little end :
The ladies are in hucksters' handling now.

DEVOTION.

I would I had my time in praying spent,
That I in wooing Conscience did consume.

Enter the three Lords of London and NEMO.

DESIRE.

Here come the lords : let's show good countenance,
man.

POMP.

Yet more ado, before we can enjoy
The joys of marriage with our mistresses ?
Be these the lords that title do pretend ?
My Lords of Lincoln, so we hear you be,
What are your names ?

DELIGHT.

Devotion, Desire, and Delight.

¹ That is, under the protection of their husbands—a legal phrase, not yet strictly applicable, as the ladies are not to be married to the lords until the next day—

“ And even to-morrow is the marriage-day.”

POMP.

Which comes for Lucre ?

DESIRE.

I Desire.

PLEASURE.

Which for Conscience ?

DEVOTION.

I Devotion.

POLICY.

Which for Love ?

DELIGHT.

I Delight.

POLICY.

You shall be answered straight.

PLEASURE.

I can answer them quickly. Ye cannot have them, nor ye shall not have them.

POLICY.

Stay, Pleasure ; soft. My Lord Desire, you Lucre seek : desire of Lucre (be it without reproach to you, my lord) is covetousness, which cannot be separated long from that. Read, my lord.

[*Point to the stone of Care.*]

DESIRE.

In golden letters on this stone is written *Care*.

POLICY.

Care with desire of Lucre well agrees ; the rather for that London's Lucre may not be sepa-

rated from London's Pomp : so you may take that stone, if ye will ; but the lady you cannot have.

DESIRE.

And a stone is a cold comfort, instead of Lucre.

POLICY.

Devotion to Conscience (I speak now to you, my lord, that are learned) is sorrow for sin, or (in one word) read— [*Points to the stone of Remorse.*]

DEVOTION.

On this sweating-stone in brass is set *Remorse*.

POLICY.

And that is your portion ; for Conscience is bestowed on London's Pleasure, because London makes o'¹ Conscience what pleasure they use and admit, and what time they bestow therein, and to what end : so, my Lord Devotion, either that or nothing.

DEVOTION.

A stone is a hard lot, instead of a lady.

POLICY.

My Lord Delight, that do delight in Love,
You must I love for making choice of mine.
Love is my portion, and that flint is yours.

DELIGHT.

Here in lead is written *Charity*: and what of this ?

¹ [Old copy, a.]

POLICY.

If you be (as I doubt not) honest Delight in love, then in the best sense you can have but Charity: if you be (which I suspect not) other Delight in love, you must be noted for concupiscence, and that you will blush to be. Well, Charity is your best: then, that is your portion; for, mark ye, London's Policy joins with London's Love, to show that all our policy is for love of London's commonwealth; and so our love cannot be separate from our policy. You hear this?

DELIGHT.

A flint's a hard change for so fair a wife.

POLICY.

And thus, lords, Desire of Lucre may take Care; Devotion of Conscience may have Remorse; and Delight of Love may have Charity: other recompense none.

PLEASURE.

And so we three leave you three with Care, Remorse, and Charity. *[Exeunt.]*

DESIRE.

With Care and Remorse, I swear, ye do leave us; but what Charity I cannot tell.

DEVOTION.

Well, yet we must use Charity, though we fail of our desire; and we are answered with such reason as is not to be gainsayed.

DELIGHT.

Indeed, my lord, your calling is to persuade to charity ; but if I use patience, it shall be perforce.

DEVOTION.

Yet being so wisely warn'd, methinks, we should be arm'd, and take this in worth : that the world wonder no further, I will take up my hard burden of Remorse, and be gone. *[Exit.]*

DESIRE.

It is good to follow examples of good. I'll take this heavy burden of Care, and follow as I may. *[Exit.]*

DELIGHT.

Because I'll not be singular, I'll frame myself to follow, taking this cold portion of Charity as my share. *[Exit.]*

Enter SIMPLICITY with DILIGENCE.

SIMPLICITY.

Come on, Master Diligence : I have been seeking ye, as a man should seek a load of hay in a needle's eye.

DILIGENCE.

And why hast thou sought me, I pray thee, so earnestly ?

SIMPLICITY.

Why ? For this ointment, these shells, these pictures : do ye not know this *countus mountus cum this da mihi ?*

DILIGENCE.

What money ? Why, do I owe thee any money ?

SIMPLICITY.

Owe me? Tush, no, man; what do ye talk of owing? Come, and yet I must have some certain *sigillatum* and *deliberatum in presentia*. Do you not understand, sir? Fortypence and furniture by my Lord Pomp's 'pointment against the wedding-day, to be one of the showmakers. I do not say shoemakers, and yet they be honest men.

DILIGENCE.

I understand thee now, and thou shalt want neither money nor furniture for that. Sawest thou not Fraud lately?

SIMPLICITY.

No, a fox ferret him! for if I could find him, I would make him fast enough for cosening me of ten shillings for certain copper buttons and rings. I thought to have been a haberdasher, and he hath made me worse than a haymaker.

DILIGENCE.

I may say to thee in counsel, but I'll have no words of it, he hath overreach'd me too: but if thou spy him first, let me understand; and if I see him first, thou shalt have knowledge; for I'll tell thee—but laugh not—he showed me a purse with a hundred pound in angels, which he would deliver me in pawn to be my true prisoner, because, for his credit, he was loth to go with me through the streets to Newgate. I refused it at first; but at last by his entreaty I was content to take his pawn, and thinking he had given me the right purse of gold, he had another like it, which he gave me with counters, and so went away. I never did see him since; but, mum, no words of it.

SIMPLICITY.

No words, quotha! that's a stale jest; would you be cosen'd so!

DILIGENCE.

Well, so it is now. Come, follow me for thy furniture and money. *[Exeunt.]*

Enter DISSIMULATION and FRAUD in caps, and as the rest must be for the show.

DISSIMULATION.

The coast is clear: come, follow, Fraud, and fear not, for who can decipher us in this disguise? Thus may we shuffle into the show with the rest, and see and not be seen, doing as they do, that are attired like ourselves.

FRAUD.

That is, to stand amongst them, and take as they take, torches or anything to furnish the show. Now, if we can pass but this day unseen, let tomorrow shift for itself as it may. I promise thee, Dissimulation, thou art very formal.

DISSIMULATION.

Not more than thyself, Fraud. I would thou sawest thy picture.

FRAUD.

Picture here, picture there! let us follow our business. *[Exeunt.]*

Enter a Wench, singing.

*Strew the fair flowers and herbs that be green,
To grace the gayest wedding that ever was seen.*

*If London list to look, the streets were ne'er so clean,
Except it was, when best it might, in welcome of our
Queen.*

*Three lovely lords of London shall three London
ladies wed ;*

*Strew sweetest flowers upon the stones ; perfume the
bridal bed.*

Strew the fair flowers, &c.

*Enter first DILIGENCE with a truncheon, then a boy
with POLICY'S lance and shield : then POLICY
and LOVE, hand in hand : then FRAUD in a
blue gown, red cap, and red sleeves, with AMBITION'S
lance and shield : then a boy with POMP'S
lance and shield : then POMP and LUCRE, hand
in hand : then DISSIMULATION with PRIDE'S
lance and shield : then a boy with PLEASURE'S
lance and shield : then PLEASURE and CONSCIENCE,
hand in hand : then SIMPLICITY, with
TYRANNY'S lance and shield. They all going
out, NEMO stays and speaks.*

NEMO.

These lords and ladies thus to church are gone,
An honoured action to solemnise there ;
With greater joy will they return anon,
Than Cæsar did in Rome his laurel wear.
Lord Policy hath Love unto his pheer ;
Lord Pomp hath Lucre to maintain his port ;
Lord Pleasure Conscience, to direct his sport.
Usury is marked to be known ;
Dissimulation like a shadow fleets,
And Simony is out of knowledge grown,
And Fraud unfound in London, but by fits.
Simplicity with Painful Penury sits ;
For Hospitality, that was wont to feed him,
Was slain long since, and now the poor do need him.

VOL. VI.

2 I

That Hospitality was an honest man,
 But had few friends, alas ! if he had any ;
 But Usury, which cut his throat as then,
 Was succoured and sued for by many.
 Would Liberality had been by thy side,
 Then, Hospitality, thou hadst never died.
 But what mean I, one of the marriage train,
 To mourn for him will ne'er be had again ?
 His ghost may walk to mock the people rude :
 Ghosts are but shadows, and do sense delude.
 I talk too long ; for, lo, this lovely crew
 Are coming back, and have performed their due.
*[Return as they went, saving that the blue gowns,
 that bare shields, must now bear torches :
 SIMPLICITY going about spies FRAUD, and
 falleth on his knees before PLEASURE and
 CONSCIENCE, saying—*

SIMPLICITY.

O Lady Conscience, that art married to Lord
 Pleasure,
 Help thy servant, Simplicity, to recover his lost
 treasure.
 A boon, my lords, all for Love and Lucre[s]
 sake ;
 Even as you are true lords, help a false lout to
 take.

PLEASURE.

Thou shalt have help : speak, what is the matter ?

SIMPLICITY.

See you yon fellow with the torch in his hand ?
 E'en the falsest villain that is in this land.
 Let him be laid hold on, that he run not away,
 And then ye shall hear what I have to say.

PLEASURE.

Diligence, bring him hither. Good lords and ladies, stay.

SIMPLICITY.

O Master Fraud, welcome to the butts :
Now I'll have my ten shillings in spite of your
guts.
The French canker consume ye, you were an old
Frenchman !
De gol' button, gol' ringa, bugla lace ! you cosen'd
me then.
My lords, I beseech ye, that at Tyburn he may
totter,
For instead of gold the villain sold me copper.

PLEASURE.

Is this true, Master Skill ?

FRAUD.

It is true in a sort, my lord. I thought to be pleasant with him, being my old acquaint'ce, and disguis'd myself like an old French artificer ; and having a few copper knacks, I sold them to him, to make sport, for ten shillings, which money I am content to pay him again : so shall he have no loss, though we have made a little sport.

PLEASURE.

First, give him an angel before my face.
Simplicity, art thou pleased ?

SIMPLICITY.

Truly I am pleas'd to take a good angel for ten shillings, speciously of such a debtor as Master Fraud ; but now I am to be pleas'd otherwise,

that is, to see him punished. I promise ye the people love him well, for they would leave work and make half-holiday to see him hanged.

PLEASURE.

That his punishment may please thee the better, thou shalt punish him thyself: he shall be bound fast to yon post, and thou shalt be blindfold, and with thy torch shalt run, as it were, at tilt, charging thy light against his lips, and so (if thou canst) burn out his tongue, that it never speak more guile.

SIMPLICITY.

O, *singulariter nominativo*, wise Lord Pleasure: *genitivo*, bind him to that post: *dativo*, give me my torch: *accusativo*, for I say he's a cosener: *vocativo*, O, give me room to run at him: *ablativo*, take and blind me. *Pluraliter per omnes casus*, Laugh all you to see me, in my choler adust, To burn and to broil that false Fraud to dust.

[Bind FRAUD, blind SIMPLICITY: turn him thrice about; set his face towards the contrary post, at which he runs, and all-to burns it. DISSIMULATION, standing behind FRAUD, unbinds him, and while all the rest behold SIMPLICITY, they two slip away: PLEASURE, missing FRAUD, saith—

PLEASURE.

Wisely perform'd! but soft, sirs, where is Fraud? O notable¹ villain! gone, whiles we beheld The other. Who loos'd him? Who let him slip? Well, one day he will pay for all. Unblind Simplicity.

[Old copy, *noble*; the emendation was suggested by Mr Collier.]

SIMPLICITY.

How now ! Have I heated his lips ? Have I warm'd his nose, and scorched his face ? Let me see : how looks the villain ? Have I burned him ?

DILIGENCE.

Thou hast done more ; for thou hast quite consumed him into nothing. Look, here is no sign of him ; no, not so much as his ashes.

SIMPLICITY.

Very few ashes, if there be any. Ye may see what a hot thing anger is : I think that the torch did not waste him so much as my wrath. Well, all London, nay, all England, is beholding to me for putting Fraud out of this world. I have consumed him and brought him to nothing, and I'll tread his ashes under my feet, that no more Frauds shall ever spring of them. But let me see : I shall have much anger ; for the tanners will miss him in their leather, the tailors in their cutting out of garments, the shoemaker in closing, the tapsters in filling pots, and the very oystermen to mingle their oysters at Billingsgate : yet it is no matter ; the world is well-rid of such a crafty knave.

PLEASURE.

Well, now thou art satisfied, I wish all here as well contented ;
And we, my lords, that praise this happy day,
Fall we on knees, and humbly let us pray.

POMP.

First that from heaven upon our gracious queen
All manner blessings may be multiplied,
That as her reign most prosperous hath been,

During world's length so may it still abide,
And after that with saints be glorified.
Lord ! grant her health, heart's-ease, joy and mirth,
And heaven at last, after long life on earth.

POLICY.

Her council wise and nobles of this land
Bless and preserve, O Lord ! with Thy right hand.

PLEASURE.

On all the rest that in this land do dwell,
Chiefly in London, Lord ! pour down Thy grace,
Who living in Thy fear, and dying well,
In heaven with angels they may have a place.

FINIS.

A KNACK
TO
KNOW A KNAVE.

EDITION.

*A most pleasant and merie new Comedie, intituled A
Knacke to Knowe a Knave. Newlie set foorth, as it
hath sundrie tymes bene played by Ed: Allen and his
Companie. With Kemps applauded Merriments of
the men of Goteham, in receiuing the King into
Goteham. Imprinted at London by Richard Iones,
dwelling at the signe of the Rose and Crowne, nere
Holborne Bridge, 1594. 4°. Black letter.*

A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE.

*Enter KING EDGAR, BISHOP DUNSTAN, and PERIN,
a courtier.*

KING.

Dunstan, how highly are we bound to praise
The Eternal God that still provides for us,
And gives us leave to rule in this our land ;
Likewise Vespasian, Rome's rich emperor,
Suppressing sin, that daily reigns in us.
First, murder we reward with present death,
And those that do commit felonious crimes
Our laws of England do award them death :
And he that doth despoil a virgin's chastity
Must likewise suffer death by law's decree,
And that decree is irrevocable.
Then, as I am God's vicegerent here on earth,
By God's appointment here to reign and rule,
So must I seek to cut abuses down, that, like
To Hydra's heads, daily grows up, one in another's
Place, and therein makes the land infectious.
Which if with good regard we look not to,
We shall, like Sodom, feel that fiery doom
That God in justice did inflict on them.

DUNSTAN.

Your grace's care herein I much commend,
 And England hath just cause to praise the Lord,
 That sent so good a king to govern them.
 Your life may be a lantern to the state,
 By perfect sign of humility.
 How blest had Sodom been in sight of God,
 If they had had so kind a governor;
 They had then undoubtedly escap'd that doom,
 That God in justice did inflict on them.
 Then, England, kneel upon thy hearty knee,
 And praise that God that so provides for thee.
 And, virtuous prince, thou Solomon of our age,
 Whose years, I hope, shall double Nestor's reign,
 And bring a thousand profits to the land,
 Myself (dread prince), in token of my love
 And dutiful obedience to your grace,
 Will study daily, as my duty wills,
 To root sins from the flourishing commonwealth,
 That Fame, in every angle of the world,
 May sound due praise of England's virtuous¹ king.

KING.

Dunstan, live thou, and counsel still the king
 To maintain justice, were it on himself,
 Rather than, soothing him in his abuse,
 To see subversion of his commonwealth.
 I tell thee, Dunstan, thou hast pleased the king,
 And proved thyself a virtuous councillor:
 Thy counsel is to me as North-Star light,
 That guides the sailor to his wished port;
 For by that star he is so comforted,
 That he sails dangerless on dangerous seas,
 And in his deepest sadness comforts him.
 So Dunstan's knowledge is that star of joy,
 That will with help conduct me to my happiness.

¹ [Old copy, *vetuous*.]

HONESTY.

And yet thou art not happy, Edgar,
Because that sins, like swarms, remain in thee.

KING.

Why, 'tis impossible ; for I have studied still,
To root abuses from the commonwealth,
That may infect the king or commonalty.
~~Therefore~~, base peasant, wilful as thou art,
I tell thee ~~troth~~, thou hast displeas'd the king.

HONESTY.

Nay, the king hath displeased himself,
In trusting every one that speaks him fair :
For through fair words kings many times are fain
To countenance knaves by their authority.
I will not say your grace doth so——

PERIN.

No, sir ; you were not best.

HONESTY.

Why, if I should, I might make good my word,
And find a knave, I fear, before I part.

KING.

Why, what art thou ?

HONESTY.

Marry, I go plain, and my name is Honesty :
A friend to your grace, but a foe to flatterers,
And one that hath *a knack to know a knave*.

PERIN.

As how, sir ?
By art, or by some foolish gift God hath given you

508 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE.

You are some physician, or skill'd in phys'ognomy,
or in palmestry ;
For, I am sure, you can never do it by astronomy,
Because there are no stars to know a knave.

HONESTY.

True, but many an honest man knows a knave to
his cost,
And is neither physician, or skill'd physiognomer,
palmester, nor astronomer,
But a plain man of the country, like me,
That knows a knave, if he do but see his cap.

PERIN.

That were pretty, i' faith, to see. Honesty know
a knave by his cap :
'Tis more than I can do with all the skill I have.
But tell me, I pray thee, how I should know a
knave.

HONESTY.

I believe you well ; for offenders never bewray
their offences,
Till the law find them, and punish them.
But you would fain tell how to know a knave ?
Then thus : the first man you meet in the morning,
If he salute you, draw near him,
And smell to his hat, and after smell to your own ;
And, my cap to a noble, if his smell like yours, he
is a knave.
I think I spoke with you now !

PERIN.

Base villain, were it not that the king's presence
Doth privilege thy presumption, I would teach you
to jest with your fellows.

KING.

Forbear, Honesty ; thou art a good plain fellow,
And I commend thy wit, that hast such ways to
know a knave.

HONESTY.

Honesty is plain, my lord, but no good fellow,
For good fellows be purse-takers now-a-days :
And there be so many of such good fellows,
That Honesty may walk the streets without com-
pany.
Not that there wants company, but honest com-
pany, I mean ;
Yet Honesty can clap a knave on the shoulder for
all his bravery.

PERIN.

Why, base companion, mean you me ?

HONESTY.

Not base, sir, because I was truly begotten,
For Honesty may be suspected, but never detected.
But you think I had a bailiff to my father, as you
had,
And that my mother could return a writ of error,
As yours did, when such a gallant as you were
gotten.

KING.

Believe me, Perin, he hath touch'd you now ;
And I perceive, though Honesty be simple,
Yet many times he speaks truth.

HONESTY.

True, if it please your grace, for honest men will
not lie.

But, if your grace vouchsafe to give me leave,
 You shall see me find more knaves than one,
 If my cunning fail me not; or else say Honesty
 had no honesty.

KING.

But tell me, Dunstan, how thinkest thou of this
 motion?
 Were it not good, thinkest thou, we gave him leave
 To stifle such caterpillars as corrupt the common-
 wealth?
 For many times such simple men as he
 Bewray much matter in simplicity.
 Then, tell me, Dunstan, what thinkest thou of his
 motion?

DUNSTAN.

If it please your grace to think it good,
 Dunstan will say, as once Hephæstion did,
 When Alexander was rich Macedon;¹
 That whatsoe'er the king himself thought meet,
 He would in dutiful obedience yield unto.
 And so saith Dunstan to your majesty:
 For many times such simple men bring that to pass,
 That wiser heads cannot attain unto;
 For doubtless he hath some device in hand,
 Whereby to find such subtle knavery.

KING.

Well, Dunstan, then, as thou hast counsell'd me,
 I will for once make proof of Honesty.
 Sirrah: come hither:
 In hope you will, as your profession is
 In honest sort to find deceivers out,
 And, finding them, to give us notice straight,

¹ [There must be some corruption here, or the author was not very anxious to be correct in his classical allusions.]

That we may punish them for their amiss.
We give thee leave to work what means thou
may'st,
So it be not prejudice to the state nor us.

HONESTY.

My gracious lord, if Honesty offend
In anything that he hath promised,
And do not, as your grace hath given in charge,
Stifle such caterpillars as corrupt the state,
Let Honesty receive such punishment,
As he deserves that leses to the king.¹

KING.

Honesty, it is enough ; but tell me now
What moved thee first to undertake this task
To visit us ? Speak truth, dissemble not.

HONESTY.

If I should tell your grace, 'twould make you laugh
To hear how Honesty was entertain'd.
Poor, lame, and blind, when I came once ashore,
Lord ! how they came in flocks to visit me ;
The shepherd with his hook, and thrasher with his
flail,
The very pedlar with his dog, and the tinker with
his mail :
Then comes a soldier counterfeit, and with him was
his jug,²

¹ [Lies to the king. The word *leses* is more generally used as a substantive.]

² [*Jug* is a leman or mistress. Mr Collier remarks that this passage clears up] the hitherto unexplained exclamation in "King Lear," act. i. sc. 4: "Whoop, Jug, I love thee."—The Tinker's *mail*, mentioned in the preceding

512 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE

And Will, the whipper of the dogs, had got a
 bouncing trug ;
 And cogging Dick was in the crew that swore he
 came from France :
 He swore that in the king's defence he lost his arm
 by chance ;
 And yet in conscience, if I were put to swear,
 I would be bound to lay a pound, the knave was
 never there.
 And hap'ning 'mongst this company by chance one
 day,
 I had no sooner nam'd my name, but they ran all
 away.
 But now I will to my task, and leave your grace ;
 And so I take my congè of your majesty. [*Exit.*]

KING.

Honesty, farewell, and look unto your charge.

PERIN.

My gracious lord, if I might not offend,
 I would entreat a favour at your hand.
 'Tis so, I heard of late, my gracious lord,
 That my kind father lay at point of death,
 And if, my lord, I should not visit him,
 The world, I fear, would find great fault with me.

KING.

Nay, Perin, if your business be of weight,
 We are content to give you leave to go :
 Provided this, that you return again,
 When you have seen your father and your friends.

line, is his wallet. *Trug*, in the following line, is equivalent to *trull*, and, possibly, is only another form of the same word : Middleton (edit. Dyce ii. 222) has the expression, "a pretty, middlesized *trug*." See also the note, where R. Greene's tract is quoted.

PERIN.

My gracious lord, I will not stay there long,
Only but see my father and return again :
Till when, my gracious lord, I take my leave.

[*Exit.*]

KING.

Perin, farewell.
And tell me, Dunstan, now we are alone,
What dost thou think of beauteous Alfrida,
For she is reported to be passing fair ?
They say she hath a white pit in her chin,
That makes her look like to the Queen of Love,¹
When she was dallying with Endymion.
Believe me, Dunstan, if she be so fair,
She will serve our turn to make a concubine :
Methinks 'tis good some time to have a love,
To sport withal, and pass away the time.

DUNSTAN.

Ay, my good lord ; Dunstan could well allow of
it,
If so your grace would marry Alfrida.

KING.

What ?

Wouldst thou have me marry her I never saw ?
Then men would say I doted on a wench :
But, Dunstan, I have found a policy,
Which must indeed be followed to the full.

¹ In one copy the text is as we give it, and in another the word is printed *Ideal*, the alteration having been made in the press. Possibly the author had some confused notion about *Ida* ; but, if he cared about being correct, the Queen of Love did not " dally with Endymion."

Enter ETHENWALD.

Earl Ethenwald, welcome : I thought to send for you.

You must go do a message for us now :
 'Tis nothing but to woo a wench, which you
 Can do. You must not woo her for yourself,
 But me. Tell her, I sit and pine like Tantalus ;
 And, if you can, strain forth a tear for me.
 Tell her she shall be honoured in my love,
 And bear a child that one day may be king.
 Bid her not stand on terms, but send me word,
 Whether she be resolved to love me, yea or no.
 If she say no, tell her I can enforce her love :
 Or 'tis no matter, though you leave that out,
 And tell her this—we hear she is as wise,
 As eloquent and full of oratory,
 As Thaly¹ was, daughter of Jupiter,
 Whose speeches was so pleasing 'mong the Greeks,
 That she was term'd a second Socrates.
 For some report, women love to be praised ;
 Then in my cause, I pray thee, love thou Alfrida.

ETHENWALD.

My gracious lord, and Ethenwald shall not fail
 To show his humble duty to your majesty.
 I will, my lord, woo her in your behalf, plead love
 For you, and strain a sigh to show your passions :
 I will say she is fairer than the dolphin's eye,
 At whom amar'd the night-stars stand and gaze.
 Then will I praise her chin and cheek, and pretty
 hand,
 Long, made like Venus when she us'd the harp,
 When Mars was revelling in Jove's high house.

¹ [Thalia.]

Besides, my lord, I will say she hath a pace
 Much like to Juno in Ida¹ vale,
 When Argus watch'd the heifer on the mount.
 These words, my lord, will make her love, I am
 sure ;
 If these will not, my lord, I have better far.

KING.

Nay, this is well : now, Ethenwald, be gone,
 For I shall long to hear of thy return.

ETHENWALD.

My gracious lord, I humbly take my leave. [*Exit.*]

KING.

Ethenwald, farewell. Dunstan, how likest thou
 this ?
 What, have I done well in sending Ethenwald ?
 But in good time, how if he like the maid ;
 Believe me, Dunstan, then my game is marr'd.

DUNSTAN.

I do not think, my gracious lord,
 My nephew Ethenwald bears that bad mind,
 For hitherto he hath been termed just,
 And clept² your grace his gracious favourer.

KING.

True, Dunstan ; yet have I read that love
 Hath made the son deceive the father oft.
 But, Dunstan, leaving this, come, let's to court.

¹ [Old copy, *Idea* ; a trissyllable is required for the
 rhythm.]

² [Old copy, *kept*.]

DUNSTAN.

I will attend upon your majesty. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter BAILIFF of Hexham, and his four sons; to wit,
a COURTIER, a PRIEST, a CONEYCATCHER, and
a FARMER.*

BAILIFF.

My sons, you see how age decays my state,
And that my life, like snow before the sun,
'Gins to dissolve into that substance now,
From whose enclosure grew my fire of life;
The earth I mean, sweet mother of us all,
Whom death, authorised by heaven's high power,
Shall bring at last, from whence at first I came.
Yet, ere I yield myself to death, my sons,
Give ear, and hear what rules I set you down.
And first to thee, my son, that liv'st by wit:
I know thou hast so many honest sleights,
To shift and cosen smoothly on thy wit,
To cog and lie, and brave it with the best,
That 'twere but labour lost to counsel thee.
And therefore to the next—
Walter, that seems in show a husbandman—
My son, when that thy master trusts thee most,
And thinks thou dealest as truly as himself,
Be thou the first to work deceit to him;
So by that means thou may'st enrich thyself,
And live at pleasure when thy master's dead:
And when to market thou art sent with wool,
Put sand amongst it, and 'twill make it weigh—
The weight twice double than it did before:
The overplus is thine into thy purse—
But now, my son, that keeps the court;
Be thou a means to set the peers at strife,
And curry favour, for the Commons' love.
If any, but in conference, name the king,
Inform his majesty they envy him;

And if the king but move, or speak to thee,
Kneel on both knees, and say, God save your
majesty.
If any man be favoured by the king,
Speak thou him fair, although in heart thou envy
him,
But who is next?

PRIEST.

That am I, father, that use the word of God,
And live only by the heavenly manna.

BAILIFF.

Who? the Priest? Give ear, my son,
I have a lesson yet in store for thee.
Thou must, my son, make show of holiness;
And blind the world with thy hypocrisy;
And sometime give a penny to the poor,
But let it be in the church or market-place,
That men may praise thy liberality.
Speak against usury, yet forsake no pawns,
So thou may'st gain three shillings in the pound.
Warn thou the world from sin and vile excess,
And now and then speak against drunkenness:
So by this means thou shalt be termed wise,
And with thy pureness blind the people's eyes.
But now, my sons, discourse to me in brief
How you have lived, and how you mean to die.

CONEYCATCHER.

Then, father, thus I live that use my wit:
Unto myself I love still to be wise;
For when I am driven to shift for meat or coin,
Or gay apparel to maintain me brave,
Then do I flaunt it out about the 'Change,
As if I were some landed gentleman;
And, falling in with some rich merchant there,

I take commodities for six months' day :
 The bill being made, I must set to my hand ;
 Then, if I pay not, they may burn the band.¹

FARMER.

Then, father, hark how I have profited—
 Walter, your son that keeps the country—
 I have raised the markets and oppress'd the poor,
 And made a thousand go from door to door.
 And why did I, think you, use this extremity ?
 Because I would have corn enough to feed the
 enemy.

Father, you know we have but a while to live,
 Then, while we live, let each man shift for one ;
 For he that cannot make shift in the world,
 They say he's unworthy to live in it :
 And he that lives must still increase his store,
 For he that hath most wealth of all desireth
 more.

PERIN.

Brethren, you have spoken well, I must needs say ;
 But now give ear to me, that keeps the court.
 Father, I live as Aristippus did,
 And use my wits to flatter with the king.
 If any in private conference name the king,
 I straight inform his grace they envy him.
 Did Sinon live, with all his subtlety
 He could not tell a flattering tale more cunningly.
 Sometime I move the king to be effeminate,
 And spend his time with some coy courtesan.
 Thus with the king I curry favour still,
 Though with my heart I wish him any ill :
 And sometime I can counterfeit his hand
 And seal, and borrow money of the commonalty ;
 And thus I live and flaunt it with the best,

¹ [Bond.]

And dice and card inferior unto none :
And none dares speak against me in the court,
Because they know the king doth favour me.

PRIEST.

And I, among my brethren and my friends,
Do still instruct 'em with my doctrine,
And Yea and Nay goes through the world with us.
Fie, not an oath we swear for twenty pound :
Brethren, say we, take heed by Adam's fall ;
For by his sins we are condemned all.
Thus preach we still unto our brethren,
Though in our heart we never mean the thing :
Thus do we blind the world with holiness,
And so by that are termed pure Precisians.

BAILIFF.

Full well and wisely have you said, my sons,
And I commend you for your forward minds,
That in your lives bewray whose sons ye are.
Here have I been a bailiff threescore years,
And us'd exaction on the dwellers-by ;
For if a man were brought before my face
For cosenage, theft, or living on his wit :
For counterfeiting any hand or seals,
The matter heard, the witness brought to me,
I took a bribe, and set the prisoners free :
So by such dealings I have got the wealth,
Which I would have disburs'd among you all,
With this proviso, that you all shall live,
And lead such lives as I have set you down.
Carve to yourselves, and care not what they say,
That bid you fear the fearful judgment-day.
Live to yourselves, while you have time to live :
Get what you can, but see ye nothing give.
But hark, my sons : methinks I hear a noise,
And ghastly visions make me timorous.

Ah! see, my sons, where death, pale Death, appears,
To summon me before a fearful Judge.
Methinks Revenge stands with an iron whip,
And cries, Repent, or I will punish thee.
My heart is hardened, I cannot repent,
And I am damned to ever-burning fire.
Soul, be thou safe, and body fly to hell. [*He dieth.*]

Enter DEVIL, and carry him away.

CONEYCATCHER.

Brother, why do you not read to my father?

PRIEST.

Truly, my book of exhortation is
At my place of exercise, and without it
I can do nothing. God's peace be with him!
[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter the KING, PHILARCHUS and his FATHER,
DUNSTAN and attendants.*

KING.

Father, say on; for now my leisure serves,
And Edgar gives thee leave to tell thy mind;
For I perceive thine eyes are full of tears,
Which shows that many inward passions trouble
thee.

If any here have wrong'd thine aged years,
In keeping that from thee that is thy due,
Name but the man, and, as I am England's king,
Thou shalt have all the favour I can show.

FATHER.

Then, virtuous prince, mirror of courtesy,
Whose judgments, and whose laws for government,

And punishing of every foul abuse,
 Is like the judgment of great Alexander,
 Third of that name, whom some termed the Severe;
 Or like Vespasian, Rome's virtuous governor,
 Who, for a blow his son did give a swain,
 Did straight command that he should lose his hand.
 Then, virtuous Edgar, be Vespasian once,
 In giving sentence on a graceless child.
 Know, virtuous prince, that in my pride of years,
 When lustful pleasure prick'd my wanton mind,
 Even in the April of my flourishing time,
 I was betroth'd and wedded to a wife,
 By whom too soon I had that unkind boy,
 Whose disobedience to his aged sire
 The Lord will plague with torments worse than
 death.

This disobedient child, nay, base extravagant,¹
 Whom I with care did nourish to this state,
 Puff'd with a pride that upstart courtiers use,
 And seeing that I was brought to poverty,
 He did refuse to know me for his sire;
 And when I challenged him by nature's laws
 To yield obedience to his father's age,
 He told me straight he took it in great scorn
 To be begot by one so base as I.
 My age, that ill could brook this sharp reply,
 Did with this wand, my lord, reach him a blow;
 But he, contrary laws of God and men,
 Did strike me such a blow in vild disdain,
 That with the stroke I fell to earth again.

KING.

Unkind Philarchus, how hast thou misdone,
 In wilful disobedience to thy sire!
 Art thou grown proud, because I favoured thee?

¹ [Old copy, *Abstruquant.*]

Why, I can quickly make thee bare again,
 And then, I think, being in thy former state,
 Thou wilt remember who thy father was.
 And, gentle Sophocles, in good time I recount
 Thy ancient saying, not so old as true,
 For saith [he], He that hath many children,
 Shall never be without some mirth,
 Nor die without some sorrow ; for if they
 Be virtuous, he shall have cause to rejoice,
 But if vicious, stubborn, or disobedient,
 Ever to live in continual sadness.
 I am sorry, Philarchus, that my favours
 Have made thee insolent : well, I will see now if
 My frowns will make thee penitent.
 Now, father, see how Nature 'gins to work,
 And how salt tears, like drops of pearly¹ dew,
 Falls from his eyes, as sorrowing his amiss.

PHILARCHUS.

Most gracious prince, vouchsafe to hear me speak.
 I cannot but confess, most gracious sovereign,
 That I have err'd in being obstinate
 In wilful disobedience to my sire
 Wherein I have wrong'd nature and your majesty.
 But I am not the first, whom oversight
 Hath made forgetful of a father's love.
 But father's love shall never be forgot,
 If he but deign to pardon my amiss :
 But if your wrath will noways be appeased,
 Rip up this breast, where is enclos'd that heart,
 That bleeds with grief to think on my amiss.
 Ah, father ! pardon, sweet father, pardon me.

¹ [Old copy, *peely*.]

FATHER.

No, graceless imp, degenerate and unkind,
Thou art no son of mine, but tiger's whelp,
That hast been fost'ed by some lion's pap :
But as the tall'st ash is cut down, because
It yields no fruit, and an unprofitable cow,
Yielding no milk, is slaughtered, and the idle
drone,

Gathering no honey, is contemned ;
So ungrateful children, that
Will yield no natural obedience, must be
Cut off, as unfit to bear the name [of] Christians,
Whose lives digress both from reason and
humanity.

But as thou hast dealt unnaturally with me,
So I resolve to pull my heart from thee.
Therefore, dread prince, vouchsafe to pity me,
And grant I may have justice on my son.

KING.

Dunstan, how counsellest thou the king in this ?
I promise thee, I am sorry for the youth,
Because in heart I ever wish'd him well.

DUNSTAN.

My gracious lord, if I might counsel you,
I would counsel you to judge as he deserves.
He that disdains his father in his want,
And wilfully will disobey his sire,
Deserves, my lord, by God's and nature's laws,
To be rewarded with extremest ills :
Then, as your grace hath 'stablish'd laws for
government,
So let offenders feel the penalties.

KING.

Ay, Dunstan ; now thou speakest as fits a coun-
cillor,

But not as friend to him whom Edgar loves.
Father, what wouldest thou have me do in this ?
Thou seest thy son is sorry for his fault,
And I am sure thou would not wish his death,
Because a father's care commands the contrary.
Then, gentle father, let me plead for him,
And be his pledge for shunning wilful illa.

FATHER.

Will Edgar now be found a partial judge,
In pleading pardon for a graceless child ?
Is it not true,
That one coal of fire will burn many houses,
And one small brack in finest cloth that is,
Will both disgrace and blemish the whole piece ?
So wilful children, spotted with one ill,
Are apt to fall to twenty thousand more ;
And therefore, mighty sovereign, leave to speak,
And pass just sentence on Philarchus' life.

PHILARCHUS.

My life ? dear father, that sentence were too hard :
Let me be banish'd from my country's bounds,
And live as exil'd in some wilderness,
Barr'd from society and sight of men ;
Or let me hazard fortunes on the seas,
In setting me aboard some helmless ship,
That either I may split upon some rock,
Or else be swallowed in the purple main,
Rather than die in presence of my king,
Or bring that sorrow to your aged years.
If this suffice not, then let me be arm'd,
And left alone among ten thousand foes ;

And if my weapon cannot set me free,
Let them be means to take my life from me.

KING.

Father, what say you to Philarchus now?
Are you content to pardon his amiss?
Dunstan, I promise thee, it grieves me much,
To hear what piteous moan Philarchus makes :
Methinks I see sad sorrow in his face,
And his humility argues him penitent.
But, father, for I will not be the judge,
To doom Philarchus either life or death,
Here, take my robes, and judge him as thou wilt.

FATHER.

Then, virtuous prince, seeing you will have it so,
Although the place be far unfit for me,
I am content your grace shall have your mind.
Thus, like an ass attired in costly robes,
Or like a ring thrust in a foul sow's snout,
So do these robes and sceptre fit mine age.¹
But for I am judge, Philarchus, stand thou forth,
And know, as there is nothing so good, but it hath
some inconvenience,
So there is no man whatsoever without some fault :
Yet this is no argument to maintain thy wilful dis-
obedience.
As the rose hath his prickle, the finest velvet his
brack,
The fairest flower his bran, so the best wit his
wanton will.
But, Philarchus, thou hast been more than wanton,
Because thou hast disobeyed the laws both of God
and nature :
The tears that thou hast shed might warrant me,
That thou art penitent for thy amiss,

Besides, my son, a father's natural care
Doth challenge pardon for thy first amiss.

KING.

Father, well said : I see thou pitiest him.

FATHER.

Nay, stay, my lord :
This did I speak as father to Philarchus ;
But now, my lord, I must speak as a judge.
And now, Philarchus, mark what I set down.
Because thou hast been disobedient,
And wronged thy aged father wilfully,
And given a blow to him that nourished thee,
And thereby hast incurr'd thy mother's curse,
And in that curse to feel the wrath of God,
And so be hated on the earth 'mongst men ;
And for I will be found no partial judge,
Because I sit as God's vicegerent now,
Here I do banish thee from England's bounds,
And never to——

KING.

There stay : now, let me speak the rest.
Philarchus, thou hast heard thy father's doom,
And what thy disobedience moved him to ;
Yet for thou wast once bedfellow to the king,
And that I loved thee as my second self, thou shalt
Go live in France, in Flanders, Scotland, or else-
where,
And have [an] annual pension sent to thee.
There mayst thou live in good and honest sort,
Until thou be recalled by the king.

PHILARCHUS.

Thanks, gracious king, for this great favour shown.
And may I never live, if I forget

Your grace's kind and unexpected love,
 In favouring him whom all the world forsook :
 For which my orisons shall still be spent,
 Heavens may protect your princely majesty.
 And, loving father, here upon my knee,
 Sorry for my amiss, I take my leave
 Both of yourself, my king, and countrymen.
 England, farewell, more dearer unto me,
 Than pen can write, or heart can think of thee.
 [Exit.]

KING.

Farewell, Philarchus ; and, father, come to Court ;
 And, for Philarchus' sake, thou shalt not want.

FATHER.

Thanks, virtuous king ; I humbly take my leave.
 [Exit.]

KING.

Dunstan, I promise thee, I was like to weep,
 To hear what piteous moan Philarchus made.

DUNSTAN.

Here your grace hath showed yourself to be
 Edgar, so famed for love and virtuous government ;
 And I pray God your grace may live to be
 Long England's king to reign with verity. [Exeunt.]

[Enter HONESTY.]

HONESTY.

'Tis strange to see how men of honesty
 Are troubled many times with subtle knavery :
 For they have so many cloaks to colour their
 abuses,
 That Honesty may well suspect them, but dares
 not detect them ;

528 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE

For if he should, they have by their knavery
 Got so many friends, that though never so bad,
 They will stand in defence with the best.
 I was at the water-side, where I saw such deceit—
 I dare not say knavery—in paying and receiving
 Custom for outlandish ware, that I wond'ed to see,
 Yet durst not complain of : the reason was,
 They were countenanced with men of great wealth,
 Richer than I a great deal, but not honest.
 Then I went into the markets, where I saw petty
 knavery
 In false-measuring corn, and in scales,
 That wanted no less than two ounces in the pound.
 But all this was nothing, scant worth the talking
 of ;
 But when I came to the Exchange, I espied in a
 corner of an aisle
 An arch-cosener ; a coneycatcher, I mean,
 Which used such gross cosening, as you would
 wonder to hear.
 But here he comes fine and brave :
 Honesty marks him down for a knave.

[Enter CONEYCATCHER.]

CONEYCATCHER.

Why so, 'tis an ill wind blows no man to profit ;
 And he is but a fool that, when all fails, cannot
 live upon his wit.
 I have attired myself like a very civil citizen,
 To draw fourscore pound from a couple of fools.
 A gentleman, having made over his land by deed
 of gift,
 Means to cosen a broker with a false conveyance.
 All's one to me ; I shall lose nothing by the bar-
 gain.
 But here comes the broker : I will walk, as I re-
 garded him not.

[*Enter* BROKER.]

BROKER.

God save you, sir : I see you keep your hour.
But hear you, sir ; hath the gentleman that conveyance

You told me of ready ? I hope, sir, I
Shall need misdoubt no deceit in the matter,
For I mean plainly, and so, I hope, do you.

CONEYCATCHER.

Sir, as concerning the conveyance, I assure you,
'Tis so good, and he hath such good interest in it,
That, were I furnish'd with so much money presently,

No man in the world should have it but myself.
And for own part, you need not suspect me,
For I would not discredit myself for a thousand pound ;

For the gentleman is my very friend,
And, being in some want, is enforc'd to pawn land
For the supplying of a present necessity.
Tush, the interest is good, I warrant you.

HONESTY.

And that's much worth : some will say,
A crafty knave needs no broker,
But here is 'a crafty knave and a broker too :
There wants not a knave, then, I imagine. [*Aside.*]

BROKER.

But tell me, sir, when did he promise to be here ?
What, will it be long, ere he come ?

CONEYCATCHER.

Nay, it will not be long, ere he come,

530 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE

For the conveyance was made, ere I came from the
scrivener's.

And in good time here he comes. God save you,
sir :

[Enter GENTLEMAN.]

Here is the man I told you of, that would lend you
the money.

He is a very honest man ; and but for my sake, I
know,

He would not do it. But is the land despatch'd
another way ?

If you be ready to seal, he is ready with the money.
Hear you, sir, you have a good bargain ; despatch
it quickly.

BROKER.

Being advertised by my friend, this honest mer-
chant,

That you have certain land to pawn for present
money,

Now, I had not so much money of mine own at
this time,

But I made means to borrow so much of a friend
of mine,

Because I would not have you fall in bad men's
handling.

GENTLEMAN.

I thank you, sir, for this unspeakable favour.

If you deal amiss with me, I am undone for ever.

BROKER.

I would not deal amiss with any man for a thou-
sand pound.

HONESTY.

And yet he will cut a man's throat for twelve-
pence.

Here is a cluster of knaves ; here lacks but the
bailly of Hexham. [Aside.]

BROKER.

Well, sir, here is the money : will it please you
seal the assurance.

GENTLEMAN.

With all my heart.

HONESTY.

God save her, sirs, and her good friends ; her
is a poor Welshman, come as far as Carnarvon, in
Wales, to receive a little money, and here a has
paid her I cannot tell what. [To BROKER.] Here,
you master ; what, is it not brass money ?

BROKER.

No, honest fellow ; 'tis a good angel in gold.

HONESTY.

Who told him my name ? [Aside.] Hear you,
master : a has a great deal more in her bosom, but
a will take her leave.

CONEYCATCHER.

Nay, stay and dine with me. I must fetch him
over for all his gold. [Aside.]

HONESTY.

Marry, I thank her, good master : I will wait
upon her, I warrant you.

BROKER.

Now, sir, have you seal'd and subscribed ?

GENTLEMAN.

I have, sir.

BROKER.

And you deliver this as your deed to my use?

GENTLEMAN.

With all my heart, sir; and hope you will use me well.

BROKER.

We will talk of that another time: here is your money.

GENTLEMAN.

I thank you, sir: I'll be gone.

CONEYCATCHER.

Hear you, sir; was not this bravely done?

[*Aside.*]

GENTLEMAN.

Excellent: hold, here is forty pound, as I promised thee.

CONEYCATCHER.

I thank you, sir. Do you hear, sir, you have got a thousand pound by the bargain; but much good may it do you. [*Exit.*]

BROKER.

God-a-mercy; and here's forty pound for thy pains. Such another match, and I'll give thee a hundred pound. [*Exit.*]

CONEYCATCHER.

I thank you, sir, God b' w' y'. Now to my Welshman.

Sirrah, let me see thy piece of gold;
I'll tell thee whether it be weight or no.

Hast thou any more? I'll give thee white money
for it.

HONESTY.

Yes, a has a great deal more in her bosom,
But a will have no whit' money: O, a loves red
money.

CONEYCATCHER.

Well, I'll keep them for thee, till thou come to
my house.

HONESTY.

Why, Cutbert, wilt thou never leave thy old
knavery?

Why, we should gree together like bells,
If thou wert but hanged first.

Why, we are as near kin together

As the cates¹ of Banbury be to the bells of Lincoln.

Why, man, we are all birds of a feather,

And whosoever says nay, we will hold together.

Come, you mad slave, thou dost not know me.

Tush! I have done many better tricks than this.

CONEYCATCHER.

Why, you base slave, take you me for your fellow?

Why, I am of good reputation in the city,

And held in account with the best.

HONESTY.

And yet you are Cutbert the Coneycatcher,

The bailiff's son of Hexham, whose father, being
dead,

The devil carried to hell for his knavery.

How sayest thou, art not thou his son?

¹ [Cakes. Old copy, *cats*.]

534 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE

This grave black cloak makes you so proud,
You have forgotten who was your father.

CONEYCATCHER.

Nay, I have not forgotten that my father was a
bailiff,
A man that would live to himself
And yet, in faith, he gave me nothing at his death
But good counsel, how to live in the world.
But, sirrah, as thou knowest me, I pray thee,
bewray me not,
And in anything I can, command me.

HONESTY.

Tush ! fear not me, I will be as secret as thyself.
But, sirrah, 'tis thus, if thou wilt do one thing,
I shall tell thee, I will give thee an hundred
pound :
'Tis nothing with thee, I am sure.

CONEYCATCHER.

Tush ! tell me what it is ; I'll do it, I warrant thee.

HONESTY.

Nothing but this ; to swear upon a book
That thou sawest a gentleman pay a farmer
Four hundred pound, as the last payment of a farm
That the said gentleman bought of him.

CONEYCATCHER.

Tush ! if this be all, let me alone, I will do it.
Why, 'tis nothing for me to swear,
For I am forsworn already : but when is the day ?

HONESTY.

Why, to-morrow,

CONEYCATCHER.

But where shall I meet you ?

HONESTY.

Why, upon the Exchange at eight o'clock.

CONEYCATCHER.

I will not miss : till that time, farewell. [*Exit.*]

HONESTY.

Fare well ? [*Aside.*] Nay, you will scant fare well
By that time I have done : but I must about my
business,
To find some knack to know this knave at large.
[*Exit.*]

Enter ETHENWALD.

ETHENWALD.

The night draws on,
And Phœbus is declining towards the west.
Now shepherds bear their flocks unto the folds,
And wint' red oxen, foddered in their stalls,
Now leave to feed, and 'gin to take their rest :
Black, dusky clouds environ round the globe,
And heaven is covered with a sable robe.
Now am I come to do the king's command ;
To court a wench, and win her for the king :
But if I like her well, I say no more,
'Tis good to have a hatch before the door.
But first I will move her father to prefer
The earnest suit I have in canvassing,
So may I see the maid, woo, wed,
Ay, and bed her too. Who is here ? what ho !

Enter OSRICK.

OSRICK.

Earl Ethenwald, welcome. How fares our friends
at court?

What cause constrains your honour, that thus late
You visit us, that dream not of your coming?

ETHENWALD.

My lord, I am come unlooked-for, very true;
So is my coming yet conceal'd from you.

OSRICK.

Your honour shall repose you here to-night,
And early as you please begin your task;
Time serves not now. Come, Ethenwald,
As welcome as the king himself to me.

ETHENWALD.

Now, Ethenwald, if fortune favour thee,
Thou may'st prove happy love to Alfrida. [*Exeunt.*]

Enter HONESTY, and the KING disguised.

HONESTY.

This is the place, and this th' appointed time. I
know
He'll keep his word, for he thinks me his friend.

KING.

But tell me, Honesty, am I not well disguised?
Can any man discern me by my looks
To be the king? Take heed of that,
For then our game is marr'd: and hast
Thou promised him what reward he shall have?

HONESTY.

Tush ! fear not you ; for you never knew honest
man

Dissemble with his friend, though many friends
Dissemble with honest men. But, my lord,
The cards be shuffled, and here comes a knave.

Enter CONEYCATCHER.

CONEYCATCHER.

'Tis strange to see how men of our knowledge
live,

And how we are hated of the baser sort,
Because, forsooth, we live upon our wit :
But let the baser sort think as they will,
For he may best be termed a gentleman,
That, when all fails, can live upon his wit.
And if all fails, then have I got a wench
That cuts and deals to maintain my expense.
Now I use her, as men use sweetest flowers,
That while they are sweet and pleasant to the eye,
I do regard them for their pleasant smell ;
But when their colour fades, and scent decays,
I cast them off for men to trample on.
But to the purpose : here is the gentleman,
My honest friend did lately tell me of. [*Aside.*]
Sir, though I had another business of import,
That might have hind'ed me from coming here,
Yet in regard I am loth to break my word,
I have set my other business clean apart,
Because you should not judge amiss of me.

HONESTY.

I find you kind, sir, and yourself shall see
How I will labour to requite your courtesy.
[*To the KING.*] This is the honest man I told you
of,

One that will do your pleasure in the cause,
So be it you will content him for his pains.

KING.

Else God forbid : and, good sir, thus it is,
I bought a farm of one that dwells here by,
And for an earnest gave an hundred pound :
The rest was to be paid as six weeks past.
Now, sir, I would have you as witness,
That at my house you saw me pay three hundred
pound,
And for your pains I will give you a hundred
pound ;
Besides, I will stand your friend in what I may.
You hear the cause ;
What, will your conscience serve you to do it ?

CONEYCATCHER.

How say you, sir ? My conscience ? then you touch
me !
I tell you, sir, my conscience will serve me to do
more than this.
Why, I have been a post-knight¹ in Westminster
this twelve year,
And sworn to that which no one else would ven-
ture on.
Why, I have sworn against mine own father for
money :
I have sworn right or wrong—any ways—for
money,
When I have received money before witness, I swore
to the contrary ;
And do you misdoubt me in so slight a matter as
this,

¹ [A Knight of the Post was a person hired to swear any-
thing—a character often mentioned in old writers.]

When I have sworn against father, mother, and all
my kin ?

HONESTY.

I told you, sir, how resolute you should find him :
He doth it without fear, I warrant you. I think
That in London you could not have found a man
so fit

For your purpose. I knew his father, sir :
A man of honest reputation, and one whose life
Was witness to the life he led : he was a bailiff, sir,
Though I say't, but no bailiff that used deceit ;
He had too good a conscience for that.

KING.

All the better for that ; for it should seem by his
Behaviour that he hath had good bringing-up.

CONEYCATCHER.

Indeed, my father in his lifetime was a man
Given to the fear of God, and to use much devotion.

HONESTY.

Ay, but he gave nothing for God's sake, except it were
Hard words, or blows ; and they had been better
kept than given.
But hush ! here comes the judge.

Enter PERIN a judge, and DUNSTAN a farmer.

KING.

Hear you, sir ;
If you be in readiness, here is the judge.

CONEYCATCHER.

Ay, sir : I fear not,
I warrant you : is that your adversary ?
What an old crust it is !

HONESTY.

I think the villain hath a face hardened with
steel ;
He could never be so impudent else.

DUNSTAN.

If it please your worship, this is the man
That wrongfully would have my farm from me,
Facing me down that he hath paid me that,
Which he never off'ed, nor I never received :
And this day he hath promised to make proof,
That he hath paid me full four hundred pound.

KING.

And so I can ; and here's my witness to it,
That saw me when I paid the money.

DUNSTAN.

Why, I am sure he will not say it.
I never saw the man in all my life.

CONEYCATCHER.

No, sir ! but I saw you, and was a witness
When this gentleman paid you three hundred
pound,
As the last payment for the farm he bought.

PERIN.

But where was the money tendered ?

CONEYCATCHER.

At the gentleman's house.

PERIN.

You see, father, this merchant will be witness,

That he saw so much money tend'red,
 And you received it, being full satisfied,
 As the last payment for the farm he bought.
 And if this merchant take his oath against you,
 That seven days past he saw the money tendered,
 I must pass sentence, then, against you needs.
 [To CONEYCATCHER.] But will you swear on the
 Bible this is true ?

CONEYCATCHER.

Ay, sir, and to that intent I came hither ;
 For I will never refuse to swear a truth, while I
 live.

DUNSTAN.

Yet, ere thou speak, vouchsafe to hear me speak.
 Full threescore winters, gentle sir, I have pass'd,
 And age hath brought grey hairs upon my head :
 Look but upon my face, and thou shalt see
 The perfect pattern of humility.
 Thou man of worth, or citizen, whate'er thou be,
 Weigh but my charge, and then thou wilt not
 swear.

I have five sons, all pretty, tender babes,
 That live upon the farm that he would have ;
 Twelve hundred sheep do feed upon the plains,
 That yearly bring a great increase to me,
 Besides a hundred oxen, fatly fed,
 That every winter feed within my stalls,
 And twenty poor men, living near my house,
 I daily feed, and all upon my farm.
 Go but among my neighbours, where I dwell,
 And hear what good report they give of me.
 The poor man never yet went from my door,
 But to my power I did relieve his want :
 I was no farmer that enrich'd myself,
 By raising markets and oppressing poor,
 But I have sold my corn full many times

At better rate than I could well afford,
 And all to help my needy brethren,
 Then, ere thou swear'st, call all these things to
 mind,
 And thou wilt weep, and leave to swear untruths—
 Confusion to thy body and thy soul.

PERIN.

Well, if thou be well-advised, take thy oath ;
 But yet remember before whom thou swearest,
 The God of truth and perfect equity,
 Which will revenge wrong to the innocent
 With thousand plagues and tortures worse than
 death.

CONEYCATCHER.

By the holy contents of this Bible,
 And by that just God before whom I stand,
 I saw this man——

KING.

Peace ! shameless villain, execrable wretch,
 Monster of nature, degenerate miscreant !
 Who ever knew or heard so vile an oath
 Vilely pronounc'd¹ by such a damned slave ?
 Have I such monstrous vipers in my land,
 That with their very breaths infect the air ?
 Say, Dunstan, hast thou ever heard the like ?

¹ Some persons, not merely without reason, but directly against it, treat *vild* and *vile*, and consequently *vildly* and *vilely*, as distinct words. *Vild* and *vildly* are blunders in old spelling, only to be retained when, as now, we give the words of an author in the very orthography of that date. We profess here to follow the antiquated spelling exactly, that it may be seen how the productions in our volume came originally from the press : but when spelling is modernised, as it is in the ordinary republications of our ancient dramatists, &c., it is just as absurd to print "*vile*" *vild*, as to print "*friend*" *freind* or "*enemy*" *ennimy*.—*Mr Collier's note in the edition of 1851.*

DUNSTAN.

My liege,
Such loathsome weeds must needs infect the corn ;
Such cankers perish both the root and branch,
Unless they be soon spied, and weeded out.

KING.

I'll be the husbandman to mow such tares—
Here, Honesty ; let him be manacled,
And scar his forehead, that he may be known—
As Cain for murder, he for perjury.

CONEYCATCHER.

I beseech your grace, be good to me.

HONESTY.

Ay, you shall have a cold iron clapt in your forehead ;
A hot one, I would say : you are a slave indeed.

CONEYCATCHER.

Good Honesty !

HONESTY.

Good villain, there's no help for you. [Exeunt.

Enter ETHENWALD *alone*.

ETHENWALD.

My fancy's thoughts, like the labouring spider,
That spreads her nets to entrap the silly fly,
Or like the restless billows of the seas,
That ever alter by the fleeting air,
Still hovering past their wonted passions,
Makes me amazed in these extremities.
The king commands me on his embassy

To Orick's daughter, beauteous Alfrida,
 The height and pride of all this bounding ill ;
 To post amain, plead love in his behalf,
 To court for him, and woo, and wed the maid.
 But have you never heard that theme ?
 Deceit in love is but a merriment
 To such as seek a rival to prevent.
 Whither, distraught, roams my unruly thoughts ?
 It is the king I cosen of his choice,
 And he nill brook Earl Ethenwald should prove
 False to his prince, especially in love.
 Then thus it shall be :
 I'll tell the king the maid is fair,
 Of nut-brown colour, comely and fair-spoken,
 Worthy companion to an earl or so,
 But not a bride for Edgar, England's king.
 This will allay the strong effects in love
 Fame wrought in Edgar's mind of Alfrida.
 Well, I'll to court, and dally with the king,
 And work some means to draw his mind from love.

Enter a KNIGHT, SQUIRE, and FARMER.

KNIGHT.

Neighbour Walter, I cannot but admire to see
 How housekeeping is decayed within this thirty
 year ;
 But where the fault is, God knows : I know not.
 My father in his lifetime gave hospitality
 To all strangers,
 And distressed travellers ;
 His table was never empty of bread, beef, and beer ;
 He was wont to keep a hundred tall men in his
 hall.
 He was a feaster of all comers in general,
 And yet was he never in want of money : I think
 God did bless him with increase for his bountiful
 mind.

FARMER.

Truly, sir, I am sorry you are fallen into decay,
In that you want to maintain household charge;
And whereof comes this want? I will tell you,
sir:

'Tis only through your great housekeeping.
Be ruled by me, and do as I advise you.
You must learn to leave so great a train of men,
And keep no more than needs of force you must,
And those you keep, let them be simple men,
For they will be content with simple fare.
Keep but a boy or two within your house,
To run of errands, and to wait on you,
And for your kitchen, keep a woman-cook,
One that will serve for thirty shillings a year;
And by that means you save two liveries.
And if ye will keep retainers towards you,
Let them be farmers, or rich husbandmen,
For you shall find great profit, sir, in keeping
them:

For if you stand in need of corn or hay,
Send but to them, and you may have it straight.
And if you kill a beef, let it be so lean,
The butcher nor the grazier will not buy it.
Your drink is too strong, and tastes too much of
malt:

Tush, single beer is better far, both for your profit,
and your servants' health.

And at a Christmas-time feast none at all,
But such as yield you some commodity;
I mean such as will send you now and then
Fat geese and capons to keep house withal:
To these and none else would I have you liberal.

KNIGHT.

Why, neighbour, my goods are lent me to no other
end,

VOL. VI.

2 M

But to relieve my needy brethren ; but God, I
hope, hath in store for me.

FARMER.

Ay, trust you to that, and you may hap die a
beggar.

SQUIRE.

Why, sir, if he should not trust in God, in whom
should he trust, for God is the giver of all good
whatsoever ?

FARMER.

True ; and yet 'tis good for a man to trust to
himself now and then ; for if you be down, and
bid God help you up, and do not help yourself,
you may fortune lie and perish ; and therefore
serve God on Sundays, as you are appointed, and
thereby hope to be saved ; for by your alms-deeds
you cannot, for if you give to the poor, there be
many will say, he thinks to be saved by his alms-
deeds ; and thus you shall be ill-thought on for
your good-will ; and therefore learn to provide for
yourself ; let God provide for the poor.

KNIGHT.

I tell you, neighbour, my great grandfather and
all my predecessors have been held in good regard
for their good housekeeping ; and (God willing)
their good names shall never take an exigent¹ in
me, for I will (God willing) keep such hospitality
to my death, as my state can maintain ; and I will
rather sell my land to maintain housekeeping,

¹ Shakespeare has the word "exigent" for *extremity*, and
such seems to be its meaning here, and not the legal sense ;
the Knight says that the good name of his predecessors
for housekeeping shall never be brought into extremity by
him.

than, keeping my land, make sale of my good name for housekeeping. But, stay, who comes here ?

Enter two poor OLD MEN and a BAILIFF.

ONE OLD MAN.

God save you, sir ; I pray be good to me, for cham a poor man, and I cannot tell what you will do, for you say my horse hath broken into your corn, or your corn into my horse. But, indeed, my neighbour saw your boy drive my horse into a field. But I'll stand to nothing, now I am warn'd with a piece of paper and a little wax, to prepare to proceed to London ; and there I am invented, I cannot tell for what. The bailiff here hath arrested me, ere I was weary,¹ against my will ; he said it was upon your suit, and yet he laid his hands on me ; nay, more, on my shoulder—

ANOTHER OLD [MAN.]

And, sir, and it may please you, I borrowed certain corn ; and I brought you your corn again, and yet you 'rrest me.

FARMER.

True, sir ; but then was corn sold for four shillings a bushel, and now 'tis sold for two.

KNIGHT.

Ay, sir, but he borrowed corn, and promised To pay you corn again, and you can have But so much as you lent ; for if He should pay you at the rate you demand,

¹ [Wary, aware.]

You would have for the twenty bushels you lent,
Forty, which were neither right nor conscience.

FARMER.

O sir, I pray let me alone with my conscience.
You would have me give all I have away to the
poor, and want as you do. I pray, let me alone
to deal for myself. Hear you, have you 'rested
them?

BAILIFF.

I have, sir, as you commanded me.

FARMER.

Then to prison with them, till they have paid
such damages, as the law shall award them.

ONE POOR [MAN.]

Hear you, sir : if you should bid your boy break
down a gap, and drive in my horse, 'twere little
better than plain knavery ; for my horse is as
honest a horse as any is in this town.

ANOTHER.

Well, neighbour, we will have the horse exa-
mined

Before an officer, and my boy Jack shall write
What the horse speaks ; and if the horse say a was
driven

In against his will,
Then you may have the law of him, neighbour ;
For all the horses in the parish will be sworn
For his horse. But I'll stand to nothing——

FARMER.

Well, to prison with them, till they have paid
your due ; away with them.

ONE POOR [MAN.]

Nay, I pray, be more miserable to me, and I will give you forty shillings, when I have it.

FARMER.

By the mass, the knave hath a pretty cottage :
I'll see, and I can get that. [*Aside.*] Sirrah,
You have an old cottage ; if you will make
Me that over by deed of gift, I am content
To draw my action.

ANOTHER POOR MAN.

My house ? why, 'tis my goods,
My wife, my land, my horse, my ass, or anything
That is his. No, you caterpillar, I will never make
Away my house ; I will die first.

KNIGHT.¹

But tell me, sir,
How much would you have of them for their
trespass ?

FARMER.

Marry, forty ² shillings, and yet I befriend them.
Why, sir, I hope you will not pay it for them ?

KNIGHT.

But I will. Sirrah, bailiff, I will answer
The poor men's debts, and come home to me for
thy fee
Anon. Go, old men ; get you home, and praise
God.

ONE POOR [MAN.]

Marry, Jesus bless you. Neighbour, how many such
Good knights have you now-a-days ?

¹ [Old copy, *Squire.*]

² [Old copy, *for fourtie.*]

ANOTHER.

Too few, neighbour ; the more is the pity.
But come, lets away. *[Exeunt.]*

KNIGHT.

But who comes here ?

Enter PERIN and HONESTY.

PERIN.

God save you, gentlemen. The king greets you,
and at this time
Having some occasion to use money, hath sent to
know
What you that be knights and squires will lend his
grace ;
And you, Master Farmer : be brief, sir[s,] for I cannot stay.

KNIGHT.

Sir, though housekeeping be some hind'rance
to my willing mind, by reason that it robs me of
that, which should bewray my loving mind both
to my prince and country—money I mean, which
at this time I stand in some want of—yet of that
small store that I have, [I] am willing to impart the
lending of the king twenty pound ; and more, I
assure you, I am not able.

PERIN.

Very well ; and what say you, Master Squire ?

SQUIRE.

I say that my revenues are but small,
Yet I will lend his majesty ten pound.

PERIN.

Very well ; but what saith the Farmer ?
What can he spare the king ?

FARMER.

Marry, sir,
I am a poor farmer, and yet I can afford to lend
The king a hundred or two of pounds. And hear
you, sir ; [Aside.]
If you prefer a suit I have to the king,
I will give you forty angels for your pains :
Besides, I will give you the keeping of a dozen jades,
And now and then meat for you and your horse,
If you come to my house, and lie a whole year.

PERIN.

Why, that's well said, and I commend
Thy honest mind. Would all men were of thy
mind :
I warrant thee, thou art an honest man,
And one that loves the king. But tell me,
What wouldst thou have me do ?

FARMER.

Nothing, but procure me the king's letter to
convey corn beyond seas ; for in England it is so
good cheap, that a man can make no living by sell-
ing thereof : therefore, if the king will grant me
his letter, I will at any time lend him five or six
hundred pound, and perhaps never ask it again ;
and I will not forget your pains.

PERIN.

Sir, fear not, I will do it for you, I warrant you ;
For, I tell you, I can do much with the king.

HONESTY.

I believe you will do more than you will be
Commended for. The courtier resembleth
The jay, that decketh herself with the feathers
Of other birds, to make herself glorious ;
So the courtier must be brave, though he be
Hang'd at the gallows. [Aside.

FARMER.

Well, sir, will it please you to come and dine
With me ?

PERIN.

I thank you, sir, heartily.

FARMER.

But what's he there in your company ?

PERIN.

A plain fellow, and his name is Honesty.

FARMER.

O, let him go where he will, for he shall
Not dine with me.

HONESTY.

See how the Farmer fears my name ;
What would he do if he knew my nature ?
But hear you, master courtier, shall I dine
With you ? I promise you, sir, I am very hungry.

PERIN.

Truly, Honesty, if I were furnish'd with money,
I would not stick to give thee thy dinner ;
But now, thou seest, I am but a guest myself.

FARMER.

Truly, honest fellow, if I were certain of my cheer, I would bid thee to dinner, but know not my provision, I promise thee.

KNIGHT.

Hear you, sir ; will it please you to take part of a piece of beef with me ? you shall be welcome.

PERIN.

I thank you, sir, but I must dine with my honest friend here, else I would not refuse your gentle offer.

HONESTY.

See how he can use my name and not me :
But I perceive I may go dine with Duke
Humphrey.¹
God b'w'y, gentlemen ; for none here hath occasion to use Honesty.

KNIGHT.

Yes, Honesty ; thou shalt be my brother's guest and mine.

HONESTY.

Marry, and I thank you too ; for now the world may say,
That Honesty dines with Hospitality to-day.
[*Exeunt.*]

¹ An early instance of the use of an expression, of frequent occurrence afterwards and down to our own day, equivalent to going without dinner. See Steevens's note to "Richard III." act iv. sc. 4, where many passages are quoted on the point.

Enter OSRICK and ALFRIDA.

OSRICK.

Daughter, see that you entertain the earl
As best beseems his state and thy degree.
He comes to see, whether Fame have worthily
Been niggard in commending thee or no :
So shall thy virtues be admired at the court,
And thou be praised for kind and debonaire ;
For courtesy contents a courtier oft,
When nothing else seems pleasant in his eyes.

ALFRIDA.

Father, you shall perceive that Alfrida
Will do her best in honouring of your age,
To entertain the Earl of Cornwall so,
That he shall think him highly favoured,
Through loving speech and courteous entertain.

Enter ETHENWALD.

OSRICK.

How fares my Lord of Cornwall ? What, dis-
pleased ?
Or troubled with a mood that's malecontent ?

ETHENWALD.

Not malecontent, and yet I am not well,
For I am troubled with a painful rheum,
That, when I would be merry, troubles me ;
And commonly it holds me in my eyes,
With such extremes that I can scantily see.

OSRICK.

How long have you been troubled with the pain ?
Or is it a pain that you have usual ?

Or is it some water that, by taking cold,
Is fall'n into your eyes and troubles you ?

ETHENWALD.

I cannot tell, but sure it pains me much.
Nor did it ever trouble me till now ;
For till I came to lodge within your house,
My eyes were clear, and I never felt the pain.

OSRICK.

I am sorry that my house should cause your grief.
Daughter, if you have any skill at all,
I pray you, use your cunning with the earl,
And see if you can ease him of his pain.

ALFRIDA.

Father, such skill as I received of late,
By reading many pretty-penn'd receipts,
Both for the ache of head and pain of eyes,
I will, if so it please the earl to accept it,
Endeavour what I may to comfort him.
My lord, I have waters of approved worth,
And such as are not common to be found ;
Any of which, if it please your honour use them,
I am in hope will help you to your sight.

ETHENWALD.

No, matchless Alfrida, they will do me no good,
For I am troubled only when I look.

ALFRIDA.

On what, my lord, or whom ?

ETHENWALD.

I cannot tell.

ALFRIDA.

Why, let me see your eyes, my lord ; look upon me.

ETHENWALD.

Then 'twill be worse.

ALFRIDA.

What, if you look on me ? then, I'll be gone.

ETHENWALD.

Nay, stay, sweet love, stay, beauteous Alfrida,
And give the Earl of Cornwall leave to speak.
Know, Alfrida, thy beauty hath subdued,
And captivate the Earl of Cornwall's heart :
Briefly, I love thee, seem I ne'er so bold,
So rude and rashly to prefer my suit ;
And if your father give but his consent,
Eased be that pain that troubles Ethenwald :
And, this considered, Osrick shall prove
My father and his daughter be my love.
Speak, Osrick, shall I have her, ay or no ?

OSRICK.

My lord, with all my heart : you've my consent,
If so my daughter please to condescend.

ETHENWALD.

But what say'st Alfrida ?

ALFRIDA.

I say, my lord, that seeing my father grants,
I will not gainsay what his age thinks meet :
I do appoint myself, my lord, at your dispose.

ETHENWALD.

Well, Osrick, now you see your daughter's mine ;
But tell me when shall be the wedding-day ?

OSRICK.

On Monday next ; till then you are my guest.

ETHENWALD.

Well, Osrick, when our nuptial rites are past,
I must to court of business to the king.

ALFRIDA.

Let that be as you please, my lord ; but stay
Not long, for I shall hardly brook your absence
then.

ETHENWALD.

Fear not, Alfrida, I will not stay there long.
But come, let us in ; Father, pray lead the way.
[*Exeunt.*]

Enter the KING and DUNSTAN.

KING.

Tell me, Dunstan, what thinkest thou of the
favours of kings ?

DUNSTAN.

I think of kings' favours as of a marigold flower
That, as long as the sun shineth openeth her leaves,
And with the least cloud closeth again :
Or like the violets in America, that in summer
yield an odoriferous smell,
And in winter a most infectious savour :
For at every full sea they flourish, or at every dead
ebb¹ they vade.

¹ [Old copy, *ope.*]

558 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE.

The fish palerna, being perfect white in the calm,
Yet turneth black with every storm.
Or like the trees in the deserts of Africa,
That flourish but while the south-west wind
bloweth :
Even so, my lord, the favours of kings to them
they favour ;
For as their favours give life, so their frowns yield
death.

KING.

Well said, Dunstan : but what merits he, that
dissembles with his sovereign ?

DUNSTAN.

In my opinion, my lord, he merits death.

KING.

Then assure thyself, if Ethenwald dissemble, he
shall die. But who comes here ? Perin, what
news, that thou comest in such haste ? and what
is he that bears thee company ?

[*Enter PERIN and the FARMER.*]

PERIN.

It is, my gracious lord, an honest man, and one,
It seems, that loves your majesty ; for as your
grace
Gave me in charge, I went about into the country,
To see what sums of money I could make.
Among the chiefest of the commonalty :
And 'mongst the richest knights that I could find,
They would lend your grace at most but twenty
pound,
And every squire would lend your grace but ten.
Then came I, 'mongst the rest, to this plain man,

And asked him what he would lend the king.
He answered, sir, you see I am but poor,
Not half so wealthy as a knight or squire,
And yet, in sign of duty to his grace,
I will lend his majesty two hundred pound.

KING.

Thanks, honest fellow, for thy love to us ;
And if I may but pleasure thee in ought,
Command me to the uttermost I may.
England hath too few men of thy good mind.

Enter HONESTY and PIERS PLOWMAN.

Honesty, what news? where hast thou been so long?

HONESTY.

Ah, my lord, I have been searching for a privy knave ;
One, my lord, that feeds upon the poor commons,
And makes poor Piers Plowman wear a thread-bare coat.
It is a farmer, my lord, which buys up all the corn in the market,
And sends it away beyond seas, and thereby feeds the enemy.

KING.

Alas, poor Piers Plowman ! what ailest thou ?
Why dost thou weep ? Peace, man : if any have Offended thee, thou shalt be made amends
Unto the most.

PIERS PLOWMAN.

I beseech your grace
To pity my distress. There is an unknown thief
That robs the commonwealth, and makes me and my
Poor wife and children beg for maintenance.

The time hath been, my lord, *in diebus illis*,
That the ploughman's coat was of good homespun
russet cloth,

Whereof neither I nor my servants had no want,
Though now both they and I want,
And all by this unknown farmer ;

For there cannot be an acre of ground to be sold,
But he will find money to buy it : nay, my lord,
He hath money to buy whole lordships, and yet
but a farmer.

I have kept a poor house, where I dwell this four-
score year,

Yet was I never driven to want till now :

I beseech your grace, as you have still been just,
To seek redress for this oppression.

I beseech your grace, read my humble petition.

[*Delivers it to the KING.*]

KING.

Let me see : The humble petition of poor Piers
Plowman.

Alas, poor Piers ! I have heard my father say,
That Piers Plowman was one of the best members
in a commonwealth ;

For his table was never empty of bread, beef, and
beer,

As a help to all distressed travellers. But where
thou tellest me

I harbour him, and he is daily under my elbow,
I assure thee, 'tis more than I know ; for I harbour
None but this, which is my honest friend.

HONESTY.

Is this your honest friend ? the devil a is. [*Aside*].
My lord, this is he : if you doubt my word to be
true, call in Clerk of the Assizes. Now shall your
grace see, how Honesty can shake out a knave in
this company.

Enter CLERK OF THE ASSIZE.

Sirrah, tell me who hath most poor men in suit at this Sizes ?

CLERK.

That hath Walter Would-have-more :
He hath one poor man in suit for certain barley,
And another, for that his horse was taken in his corn.

HONESTY.

But what indictments are against him ? read them.

CLERK. [*Read the indictment.*]

First, he hath conveyed corn out of the land to feed the enemy.

Next, he hath turned poor Piers Plowman out of doors by his great raising of rents.

Next, he is known to be a common disturber of men of their quiet, by serving writs on them, and bringing them to London, to their utter undoing.

Also, he keeps corn in his barn, and suffers his brethren and neighbours to lie and want ; and thereby makes the market so dear, that the poor can buy no corn.

KING.

Enough ! Now, fie upon thee, thou monster of nature,

To seek the utter undoing of many, to enrich thyself.—

Honesty, take him, and use him as thou wilt.

HONESTY.

Come, sir, I think I found out your knavery.

VOL. VI.

2 N

Away, sir, and bear your fellow company.
[Exeunt omnes but the KING and DUNSTAN.]

Enter ETHENWALD.

ETHENWALD.

Health and good hap befall your majesty.

KING.

Ethenwald, welcome ; how fares our beauteous love ?
 Be brief, man : what, will she love or no ?

ETHENWALD.

Then, as your grace did give to me in charge,
 I have discharged my duty every way,
 And communed with the maid you so commend :
 For when the sun, rich father of the day,
 Eye of the world, king of the spangled vale,
 Had run the circuit of the horizon,
 And that Artofelez, the night's bright star,
 Had brought fair Luna from the purpled main,
 Where she was dallying with her wanton love,
 To lend her light to weary travellers,
 Then 'twas my chance to arrive at Osrick's house :
 But being late, I could not then unfold
 The message that your grace had given in charge ;
 But in the morn Aurora did appear,
 At sight of whom the welkin straight did clear.
 Then was the spangled veil of heaven drawn in,
 And Phoebus rose, like heaven's imperial king ;
 And ere the sun was mounted five degrees,
 The maid came down, and gave me the good day.

KING.

But being come, what said she then ?
 How likest thou her ? what, is she fair or no ?

ETHENWALD.

My lord, she is coloured like the Scythia maid,¹
That challenged Lucio at the Olympian games. †
Well-bodied, but her face was something black,
Like those that follow household business :
Her eyes were hollow, sunk into her head,
Which makes her have a cloudy countenance.
She hath a pretty tongue, I must confess,
And yet, my lord, she is nothing eloquent.

KING.

Why then, my lord, there's nothing good in her.

ETHENWALD.

Yes, my lord, she is fit to serve an earl or so,
But far unfit for Edgar, England's king.

KING.

So then she is fit for Ethenwald, our Cornish earl,
But far unfit for Edgar, England's king.
Well, Ethenwald, I sound your policy :
But tell me, i' faith, dost thou love the maid ?
Speak truly, man ; dissemble not.

ETHENWALD.

I do, my gracious lord, and therewithal
Entreat your majesty to pardon me.

KING.

Ethenwald, I am content to pardon thee,
And will be with thee myself ere long,

¹ The copy of this play in the British Museum has here "*Scinthia* maide;" but another, belonging to the Rev. A. Dyce, "*Scythia* maide," a reading we have followed, and, no doubt, introduced by the old printer as the sheets went through the press.

564 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE

To do thee honour in thy marriage :
And therefore, Ethenwald, thou may'st depart,
And leave us till we visit thee at home.

ETHENWALD.

My gracious lord, I humbly take my leave.

DUNSTAN.

If it please your grace, pardon me, and give me
leave,
I would gladly bring my nephew on the way.

KING.

With all my heart, Dunstan ; but stay not long.

ETHENWALD.

I humbly take my leave of your majesty.

[*Exeunt* DUNSTAN and ETHENWALD.]

[*Enter* PERIN.]

KING.

Farewell, Ethenwald. But, Perin, tell me now,
What dost thou think of Alfrida ?
Is she so foul as Ethenwald reports her ?
Believe me, then, she had been unfit for me.

PERIN.

My gracious lord, Ethenwald hath dissembled with
your majesty,
For Alfrida is fair and virtuous ;
For last night, being in private conference,
He told me he had devised a mean
To colour with the king by forg'd excuse.
No, no (quoth he), my Alfrida is fair,

As is the radiant North star crystalline,
That guides the wet and weary traveller,
Sous'd with the surge of Neptune's wat'ry main.
And thus, my lord, he fell to praising her,
And from his pocket straight he drew this counter-
feit.¹

And said 'twas made by^a beauteous Alfrida.

KING.

A face more fair than is the sun's bright beams,
Or snow-white Alps beneath fair Cynthia !
Who would refuse with Hercules to spin,
When such fair faces bears us company ?
Fair Polyxena never was so fair :
Nor she that was proud love to Troylus.
Great Alexander's love, Queen of Amazons,
Was not so fair as is fair Alfrida.
But, Perin, be thou secret to the king,
And I will sound these subtle practises.
And, Ethenwald, be sure I will quittance thee,
And teach thee how to dally with thy king.
But, Perin, let's to court until to-morn,
And then we'll take horse and away. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter mad men of Gotham, to wit, a MILLER,
a COBBLER, and a SMITH.*

MILLER.

Now, let us constult among ourselves,
How to misbehave ourselves to the king's worship,

¹ "Counterfeit" was a very common term for the resemblance of a person : in "Hamlet," act iii. sc. 4, we have "counterfeit presentment;" and in the "Merchant of Venice," act iii. sc. 2, "Fair Portia's counterfeit." In Beaumont and Fletcher's "Wife for a Month," act iv. sc. 5, we meet with "counterfeits in Arras" for portraits, or figures in tapestry.

^a [i.e., from or after.]

566 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE.

Jesus bless him! and when he comes, to deliver
him this petition,
I think the Smith were best to do it, for he's a
wise man.

COBBLER.

Neighbour, he shall not do it, as long as Jeffrey
the translator¹ is Mayor of the town.

SMITH.

And why, I pray? because I would have put you
from the Mace?

MILLER.

No, not for that, but because he is no good fellow;
Nor he will not spend his pot for company.

SMITH.

Why, sir, there was a god² of our occupation;
and I charge you by virtue of his godhead to let
me deliver the petition.

COBBLER.

But soft, you: your god was a cuckold, and his
godhead was the horn, and that's the arms of the
godhead you call upon. Go, you are put down
with your occupation; and now I will not grace
you so much as to deliver the petition for you.

SMITH.

What, dispraise our trade?

¹ [i.e., The shoemaker. There is a jest turning upon
this in one of the early collections of *facetiae*.]

² [Vulcan.]

COBBLER.

Nay, neighbour, be not angry, for I'll stand to nothing only but this—

SMITH.

But what? bear witness a gives me the but, and I am not willing to shoot. Cobbler, I will talk with you: nay, my bellows, my coal-trough, and my water shall enter arms with you for our trade. O neighbour, I cannot bear it, nor I will not bear it!

MILLER.

Hear you, neighbour; I pray consuade yourself and be not wilful, and let the cobbler deliver it: you shall see him mar all.

SMITH.

At your request I will commit myself to you,
And lay myself open to you, like an oyster.

MILLER.

I'll tell him what you say. Hear you, neighbour, we have constulted to let you deliver the petition: do it wisely, for the credit of the town.

COBBLER.

Let me alone, for the king's carminger¹ was here;
He says the king will be here anon.

SMITH.

But hark! by the mass, he comes.

¹ By "carminger" the cobbler means harbinger, an officer who preceded the monarch during progresses, to give notice and make preparation.

Enter the KING, DUNSTAN, and PERIN.

KING.

How now, Perin ; who have we here ?

COBBLER.

We, the townsmen of Gotham,
Hearing your grace would come this way,
Did think it good for you to stay.—
But hear you, neighbours, bid somebody ring the
bells.—
And we are come to you alone, to deliver our
petition.¹

KING.

What is it, Perin ? I pray thee, read.

PERIN.

Nothing but to have a license to brew strong ale
thrice a week ; and he that comes to Gotham, and
will not spend a penny on a pot of ale, if he be
a-dry, that he may fast.

KING.

Well, sirs, we grant your petition.

COBBLER.

We humbly thank your royal majesty.

KING.

Come, Dunstan ; let's away. *[Exeunt omnes.*

¹ We print it precisely as in the old copy, but we may presume that here a couplet was intended, as the cobbler's speech begins in rhyme :—

“ And we are come to you alone
To deliver our petition,”

Enter ETHENWALD alone.

ETHENWALD.

Ethenwald, be advised : the king has sent to thee ;
 Nay, more, he means to come and visit thee.
 But why ? Ay, there's the question.
 Why, 'tis for this ; to see if he can find
 A front whereon to graft a pair of horns :
 But in plain terms he comes to cuckold me.
 And for he means to do it without suspect,
 He sends me word he means to visit me.
 The king is amorous, and my wife is kind,
 So kind, I fear, that she will quickly yield
 To any motion that the king shall make,
 Especially if the motion be of love ;
 For Pliny writes, women are made like wax,
 Apt to receive any impression,
 Whose minds are like the Janamyst,
 That eats, yet cries, and never is satisfied.
 Well, be as it is, for I'll be sure of this,
 It shall be no ways prejudice to me ;
 For I will set a screen before the fire,
 And so prevent what otherwise would ensue.
 'Twere good I questioned with my father first,
 To hear how he['s] affected towards the king.
 What ho !

Enter OSRICK and ALFRIDA.

OSRICK.

Ethenwald, my son, what news ?

ETHENWALD.

Why ask you ? I am sure you have heard the
 news.

OSRICK.

Not yet, I promise you, my lord.

ETHENWALD.

Why then 'tis thus : the king doth mean to come
and visit you.

OSRICK.

And welcome shall his majesty be to me,
That in the wane of my decreasing years,
Vouchsafes this honour to Earl Osrick's house.

ETHENWALD.

So then you mean to entertain him well ?

OSRICK.

What else, my son ?

ETHENWALD.

Nay, as you will :
But hear you, wife : what do you think in this—
That Edgar means to come and be your guest ?

ALFRIDA.

I think, my lord, he shall be welcome then,
And I hope that you will entertain him so,
That he may know how Osrick honours him.
And I will be attired in cloth of biss,¹
Beset with Orient pearl, fetch'd from rich India,²
And all my chamber shall be richly [decked,]
With arras hanging, fetch'd from Alexandria.
Then will I have rich counterpoints and musk,

¹ Roquefort in his "Glossary," i. 196, states that bysse is a sort of *toffe de soie*, and the Rev. A. Dyce, "Middleton's Works," v. 558, says that it means "fine linen," while others contend that it is "a delicate blue colour," but sometimes "black or dark grey." The truth may be that it was fine silk of a blue colour, and we now and then meet it coupled with purple—"purple and bis."

² [Old copy, *Indian*.]

Calambac¹ and cassia, sweet-smelling amber-grease,
That he may say, Venus is come from heaven,
And left the gods to marry Ethenwald.

ETHENWALD.

'Swouns ! they are both agreed to cuckold me.

But hear you, wife ; while I am master of the
bark, [*Aside.*]

I mean to keep the helmster in my hand.
My meaning is, you shall be rul'd by me,
In being disguised, till the king be gone ;
And thus it shall be, for I will have it so.
The king hath never seen thee, I am sure,
Nor shall he see thee now, if I can choose ;
For thou shalt be attir'd in some base weeds,
And Kate the kitchen-maid shall put on thine :
For being richly tired, as she shall be,
She will serve the turn to keep him company.

OSRICK.

Why, men that hear of this will make a scorn of
you.

ETHENWALD.

And he that lies with this will make a horn for me.
[*Aside.*]

It is enough : it must be so.

ALFRIDA.

Methinks 'twere better otherways.

ETHENWALD.

I think not so. Will you be gone ?—

[*Exit* ALFRIDA.]

¹ [Old copy, *calamon.*]

Father, let me alone ; I'll break her of her will.
 We that are married to young wives, you see,
 Must have a special care unto their honesty ;
 For should we suffer them to have their will,
 They are apt, you know, to fall to any ill.
 But here comes the king.

Enter the KING, DUNSTAN, and PERIN, to [them]
 ETHENWALD.¹

KING.

Earl Osrick, you must needs hold us excused,
 Though boldly thus unbid we visit you :
 But know, the cause that moved us leave our court
 Was to do honour to Earl Ethenwald,
 And see his lovely bride, fair Alfrida.

OSRICK.

My gracious lord, as welcome shall you be,
 To me, my daughter, and my son-in-law,
 As Titus was unto the Roman senators,
 When he had made a conquest on the Goths ;
 That, in requital of his service done,
 Did offer him the imperial diadem.
 As they in Titus, we in your grace, still find
 The perfect figure of a princely mind.

KING.

Thanks, Osrick ; but I think I am not welcome,
 Because I cannot see fair Alfrida.
 Osrick, I will not stay, nor eat with thee,
 Till I have seen the Earl of Cornwall's wife.

¹ [i.e., he withdraws to the back of the stage, to allow the king to confer first with Osrick, and then comes forward again.]

ETHENWALD.

If it please your majesty to stay with us,
My wife shall wait as handmaid on your majesty,
And in her duty show her husband's love.
And in good time, my lord, see where she comes.
[Enter the KITCHEN-MAID, in ALFRIDA'S apparel.]
[Aside.] Alfrida, you must leave your kitchen-
tricks,
And use no words but princely majesty.

MAID.

Now Jesus bless your honourable grace.
Come, I pray, sit down : you are welcome by my
troth.
As God save me, here's never a napkin : fie, fie !
Come on ; I pray eat some plums, they be sugar.
Here's good drink, by Lady : why do you not eat ?

KING.

Nay, pray thee, eat, Alfrida : it is enough for me
to see thee eat.

MAID.

I thank you heartily. By my troth, here's never a
cushion.
By my troth. I'll knock you anon ; go to.

PERIN.

My lord, this is not Alfrida : this is the kitchen-
maid.

KING.

Peace, Perin, I have found their subtlety.—
Ethenwald, I pray thee, let me see thy kitchen-
maid.
Methinks it is a pretty homely wench :
I promise thee, Ethenwald, I like her well.

ETHENWALD.

My lord, she is a homely kitchen-maid,
 And one whose bringing up hath been but rude,
 And far unfit for Edgar's company ;
 But if your grace want merry company,
 I will send for ladies wise and courteous,
 To be associates with your majesty.
 Or if your grace will have musicians sent for,
 I will fetch your grace the best in all this land.

KING.

Ethenwald, no : I will have the kitchen-maid ;
 And therefore, if you love me, send for her,
 For, till she come, I cannot be content.

ETHENWALD.

Father, I will not fetch her. 'Swouns ! see, where
 she comes.

Enter ALFRIDA in the KITCHEN-MAID'S attire.

ALFRIDA.

Successful fortune and his heart's content
 Daily attend the person of the king.
 And, Edgar, know that I am Alfrida, daughter to
 Osrick,
 And lately made the Earl of Cornwall's wife.

KING.

Why, is not this Alfrida ?

ALFRIDA.

No, my good lord ; it is the kitchen-maid,
 Whom Ethenwald, in too much love to me,
 Hath thus attir'd to dally with the king.

MAID.

By my troth, my lord, she lies. Go to ;
I'll course you by and by.

KING.

Away, base strumpet, get thee from my sight.

MAID.

Go your ways ; you are a cogging knave, I warrant
you. [Exit.]

KING.

Base Ethenwald, dissembler that thou art,
So to dissemble with thy sovereign ;
And afterward, under a show of love,
Thou cam'st to soothe thy lesing to the king,
Meaning by that to make me to conceive,
That thy intent was just and honourable.
But, see, at last thou hast deceived thyself,
And Edgar hath found out thy subtlety ;
Which to requite think Edgar is thy enemy,
And vows to be revenged for this ill.—
Go to thy husband, beauteous Alfrida,
For Edgar can subdue affects in love.

ALFRIDA.

Thanks, gracious king, mirror of courtesy,
Whose virtuous thoughts bewray thy princely
mind,
And makes thee famous 'mongst thy enemies :
For what is he that hears of Edgar's name,
And will not yield him praise as he deserves.
Nor hath your grace ever been praised more,
Or term'd more just in any action,
Than you shall be in conquering your desires,
And yielding pardon to Earl Ethenwald.

KING. ,

Will you be gone ?

ALFRIDA.

My gracious lord, I humbly take my leave.

[ALFRIDA and ETHENWALD *Exeunt*.

KING.

How am I wrong'd, and yet without redress !

DUNSTAN.

Have patience, good my lord, and call to mind,
How you have lived praised for virtuous govern-
ment.

You have subdued lust unto this day,
And been reputed wise in government,
And will you blemish all your honours got,
In being termed a foul adulterer ?

KING.

Dunstan, forbear, for I will have it so :
It boots thee not to counsel me in this,
For I have sworn the death of Ethenwald ;
And he shall die, or Edgar will not live.
Dunstan, it is enough ; I am resolved. [*Exit*.

DUNSTAN.

Nay, if it be so, then Ethenwald shall not die ?
And since entreaties cannot serve the turn,
I will make proof for once what art will do.
Astoroth,¹ ascende ! veni, Astoroth, Astoroth, veni !

Enter the DEVIL.

DEVIL.

What wilt thou ?

¹ [Old copy, *A smoroth*.]

DUNSTAN.

Tell me, what means the king ?

DEVIL.

I will not tell thee.

DUNSTAN.

I charge thee, by the eternal living God,
That keeps the prince of darkness bound in chains,
And by that sun that thou wouldst gladly see,
By heaven and earth, and every living thing,
Tell me that which I did demand of thee.

DEVIL.

Then thus : the king doth mean to murder Ethen-
wald.

DUNSTAN.

But where is the king ?

DEVIL.

Seeking for Ethenwald.

DUNSTAN.

But I'll prevent him : follow me invisible.

DEVIL.

I will.

[*Exeunt.*

Enter the PRIEST.

PRIEST.

I have been this morning with a friend of mine,
That would borrow a small sum of money of me ;
But I have learn'd the best assurance a man can
have

VOL. VI.

20

In such a matter is a good pawn of twice the
 value,
 Or bonds sufficient for five times the quantity.
 He is my near kinsman, I confess, and a clergy-
 man,
 But fifty shillings is money ; and though I think
 I might trust him simply with it for a twelvemonth,
 Where he craves it but for a month, yet simply I
 Will not be so simple ; for I will borrow
 His gelding to ride to the term, and keep away a
 just fortnight.
 If then he pay me money, I will deliver him his
 horse.
 I would be loth to lose my money, or crave assur-
 ance of my kinsman,
 But this may be done to try me, and I mean like-
 wise to try him.
 This is plain, though truly, brethren, something
 subtle.
 But here comes one would fain take my house of
 me.

NEIGHBOUR.

Sir, I am a poor man, and I will give you thirty
 shillings a year : if I may have it, you shall be sure
 of your money.

PRIEST.

Truly, brother in Christ, I cannot afford it of the
 price ;
 A must let my house to live, I ask no gains. But
 who comes here ?

Enter HONESTY and a BEGGAR.

BEGGAR.

I beseech you, good master, for God's sake, give
 one penny to the poor, lame, and blind ; good
 master, give something.

PRIEST.

Fie upon thee, lazy fellow, art thou not ashamed to beg? Read the blessed saying of St Paul, which is, Thou shalt get thy living with the sweat of thy brows, and he that will not labour is not worthy to eat.

HONESTY.

Ay, but he remembers not where Christ saith, He that giveth a cup of cold water in my name shall be blessed. [*Aside.*]

BEGGAR.

Alas, sir, you see I am old.

PRIEST.

But that's no reason you should beg.

BEGGAR.

Alas, sir, age coming on me, and my sight being gone, I hope, sir, you will pardon me, though I beg; and therefore, for God's sake, one penny, good master.

PRIEST.

Why, I tell thee no, for the Spirit doth not move me thereunto. And in good time, look in the blessed Proverb of Solomon, which is, Good deeds do not justify a man; therefore, I count it sin to give thee anything.

HONESTY.

See how he can turn and wind the Scripture to his own use; but he remembers not where Christ say'th, He that giveth to the poor lendeth unto the Lord, and he shall be repaid sevenfold: but the

580 A MERRY KNACK TO KNOW A KNAVE.

Priest forgets that, or at leastwise he will not remember it. [*Aside.*]

BEGGAR.

Now, fie upon thee, is this the pureness of your religion?
God will reward you, no doubt, for your hard dealing.

PRIEST.

Care not thou for that. Well, neighbour, if thou wilt have my house, friend and brother in Christ, it will cost you forty shillings—'tis well worth it truly, provided this, I may not stay for my rent: I might have a great deal more, but I am loth to exact on my brother.

HONESTY.

And yet he will sell all a poor man hath, to his shirt, for one quarter's rent. [*Aside.*]

NEIGHBOUR.

God's blessing on your heart, sir, you made a godly exhortation on Sunday.

PRIEST.

Ay, brother, the Spirit did move me thereunto. Fie upon usury, when a man will cut his brother's throat for a little lucre: fie upon it, fie! We are born one to live by another, and for a man to let his own as he may live, 'tis allowed by the word of God; but for usury and oppression, fie on it, 'tis ungodly. But, tell me, will you have it?

NEIGHBOUR.

I will give you, as I have proffered you.

PRIEST.

Truly, I cannot afford it, I would I could ; but I must go to our exercise of prayer, and after I must go see a farm that I should have. [*Exeunt.*]

Enter DUNSTAN and PERIN, *with the* KING.

DUNSTAN.

Most gracious prince, vouchsafe to hear me speak,
In that the law of kindred pricks me on ;
And though I speak contrary to your mind,
Yet do I build on hope you will pardon me.
Were I as eloquent as Demosthenes,
Or like Isocrates were given to oratory,
Your grace, no doubt, will think the time well-spent,
And I should gain me commendations :
But for my note is tuned contrary,
I must entreat your grace to pardon me,
If I do jar in my delivery.

KING.

Why, Dunstan, thou hast found us gracious still,
Nor will we pull our settled love from thee,
Until we find thy dealings contrary,
But if thy parley be for Ethenwald,
That base dissembler with his sovereign,
'Twere better leave to speak in his excuse,
Than by excusing him gain our ill-will :
For I am minded like the salamander-stone
That, fir'd with anger, will not in haste be quench'd.
Though wax be soft, and apt to receive any im-
pression,
Yet will hard metal take no form, except you melt
the same.
So mean men's minds may move as they think
good,
But kings' just dooms are irrevocable.

DUNSTAN.

'Tis not enough, where lust doth move the offence.

KING.

Why, councillors may not with kings dispense.

DUNSTAN.

A councillor may speak, if he see his prince offend.

KING.

And for his counsel rue it in the end.
But Dunstan, leave : you urge us over far.
We pardon what is past ; but speak no more.

DUNSTAN.

Nay, pardon me, for I will speak my mind.
Your grace may call to mind proud Marius' fall,
That through his wilful mind lost life and empire ;
And Nimrod, that built huge Babylon,
And thought to make a tow'r to check the clouds,
Was soon dismay'd by unknown languages ;
For no one knew what any other spake :
Which made him to confess, though 'twere too
late,
He had made offence in tempting of the Lord.
Remember David, Solomon, and the rest ;
Nor had proud Holofernes lost his head,
Had he not been a foul adulterer.

KING.

Dunstan, forbear, and let this answer thee :
Thou art too presumptuous in reproving me,
For I have sworn, as truly as I live,
That I will never pardon Ethenwald.

DUNSTAN.

Did you but see the man, I am assur'd
You would not choose but pardon Ethenwald.

PERIN.

Why, Dunstan, you have seen as well as I,
That Ethenwald hath dissembled with the king.
My gracious lord, first cut that traitor down,
And then will others fear the like amiss.

DUNSTAN.

I tell thee, Perin, were the earl in place,
Thou wouldst eat these words utter'd in his disgrace.

Veni, Astoroth !¹ And, in good time, see where
he comes. [Aside.]

*Here enter ALFRIDA disguised, with the DEVIL,
[disguised as ETHENWALD.]*

KING.

But tell me, Dunstan, is this Alfrida ?

DUNSTAN.

It is, my gracious lord, and this is Ethenwald,
That lays his breast wide open to your grace,
If so it please your grace to pardon him.

KING.

Yes, Dunstan, I am well content to pardon him.
Ethenwald, stand up, and rise up, Alfrida,
For Edgar now gives pardon to you both.

DUNSTAN.

Astoroth, away ! [Aside.]
My gracious lord, Dunstan will not forget

¹ [Old copy, *Asmoroth*.]

This unknown favour shown Earl Ethenwald ;
 For which account my nephew and myself
 Do yield both lives and goods at your dispose.

KING.

Thanks, Dunstan, for thy honourable love :
 And thou deserv'st to be a councillor,
 For he deserves not other to command,
 That hath no power to master his desire ;
 For Loctrine, being the eldest son of Brute,
 Did doat so far upon an Almain maid,
 And was so ravished with her pleasing sight,
 That full seven years he kept her under earth,
 Even in the lifetime of fair Gwendolin :
 Which made the Cornish men to rise in arms,
 And never left, till Loctrine was slain.
 And now, though late, at last I call to mind
 What wretched ends fell to adulterers.

DUNSTAN.

And if your grace call Abram's tale to mind,
 When that Egyptian Pharaoh crav'd his wife,
 You will, no doubt, forgive my nephew's guilt ;
 Who by the merry jest he showed your grace,
 Did save your honour and her chastity.

KING.

We take it so ; and for amends, Ethenwald,
 Give me thy hand and we are friends ;
 And love thy wife, and live together long,
 For Edgar hath forgot all former wrong.

ETHENWALD.

Thanks, gracious king, and here upon my knee
 I rest to be disposed, as you please.

KING.

Enough, Ethenwald. But who comes here ?

Enter HONESTY.

HONESTY.

Why, I think I have taken in hand an endless task,

To smell a knave : 'tis more than a dog can do.

I have disguised myself of purpose to find

A couple of knaves, which are yet behind.

The next knave is a priest, call'd John the precise,

That with counterfeit holiness blinds the people's eyes.

This is one of them, that will say it is a shame

For men to swear and blaspheme God's holy name ;

Yet if a make a good sermon but once in a year,

A will be forty times in a tavern making good cheer :

Yet in the church he will read with such sobriety,

That you would think him very precise and of great honesty. *[Aside.]*

KING.

What, Honesty, hast thou despatch'd, and found these privy knaves ?

HONESTY.

I shall do anon : I have them in scent ; but I will be gone. *[Exit.]*

Enter PRIEST.

PRIEST.

Good Lord ! I praise God I am come from our morning's exercise,

Where I have profited myself, and e[d]ified my
brethren
In shewing the way to salvation by my doctrine ;
And now I am going to the court to prefer my
petition.
I would give a hundred pound it were granted ;
'Tis a thing of nothing : but here comes one of the
court.

Enter HONESTY.

God save you, brother in Christ : are you towards
the king ?

HONESTY.

Ay, marry am I : what then ? why dost thou ask ?

PRIEST.

Nothing, sir, but I would desire you to stand my
friend,
To get me the king's hand and seal to this letter.
I would not use it, sir, to hinder any man for a
thousand pound ;
For indeed I am a clergyman by my profession.
'Tis nothing, sir, but, as you see, to have the king's
seal
To carry tin, lead, wool, and broadcloths beyond
seas,
For you know, sir, every man will make the most
he can of his own ;
And for my part, I use it but for a present neces-
sity,
If you will undertake to do it, I'll give you a hun-
dred pound.

HONESTY.

I thank you, sir, but I am afraid the king will
hardly grant it : why, 'tis an undoing to the com-
monwealth ;

But, truly, I will move the king to hang you,
 priest, i'faith.— [Aside.
 May it please your grace to grant me my petition,
 For I offer it your grace in pure devotion.

KING.

O monstrous ! Dunstan, didst thou ever hear the
 like ?
 Now fie upon the base villain ! lay hands on him.

HONESTY.

On me ? nay, on him. Priest, I give your petition
 to the king,
 And I will speak to him you may be but hanged ;
 For if you should live, till the king granted your
 petition,
 The very ravens would pick out thine eyes living ;
 And therefore 'twere better you were hanged, to
 save the birds a labour.

KING.

Now, Honesty, hast thou done ? Is here all ?

HONESTY.

O no, my lord, for there are so many behind,
 That I am afraid my work will never have an end.
 But I see by the priest's looks he lacks company :
 Stay awhile, my lord, I'll fetch another presently.
 [Exit.

KING.

Fie, graceless man ! hast thou no fear of God,
 To withhold thee from these lawless motions ?
 Why, thou shouldst be as [a] messenger of God,
 And hate deceit and wicked avarice :
 But thou art one of those whom God doth hate,
 And thy vild deeds will witness 'gainst thy soul,

And make the most abominable in his sight,
 That made thee, wretch, but to a better end,
 Than thus to wrong his sacred Deity.
 Now, fie upon thee, monster of a man !
 That for to gain thyself a private gain,
 Wouldst seek the undoing of a commonwealth :
 And though thou bide¹ ten thousand torments
 here,
 They cannot quit thee, where thou shalt appear.

[Enter HONESTY.]

HONESTY.

A prize ! though it be long, I have found him at
 last ;
 But I could not bring him with me,
 And therefore I pinn'd a paper on his shoulder,
 Meaning thereby to mark him for the gallows.
 But husht, here he comes.

Enter PERIN.

KING.

What, Perin ! I cannot think that Perin will be
 false to me.

HONESTY.

Why no, for he is false to himself : look in his
 pocket and see.
 This is but a false writ that he hath used,
 Unknown to your majesty, and levied great sums
 of money,

¹ [Old copy, *bid*.] *Bid* may be taken in the sense of *invite*, a meaning it often bears in old writers ; but we are most likely to understand it *bide* or *abide*, the final *e* having been omitted, or dropped out in the press. In the next line we have *quit* again used for *acquit*.

And bribed upon your poor Commons extremely.
How say you, my lord, is this true or no ?

KING.

Honesty, thou sayest true. Why, impious wretch !
Ingrateful wretch that thou art,
To injure him that always held thee dear.
Believe me, Dunstan, I durst well have sworn
That Perin had not hatch'd so base a thought.

HONESTY.

Ay, but your grace sees you are deceived.
But will your grace grant me one boon ?

KING.

What's that, Honesty ?

HONESTY.

That I may have the punishing of them,
Whom I have so laboured to find.

KING.

With all my heart, Honesty : use them as thou
wilt.

HONESTY.

I thank your grace. Go fetch the other two.¹
Now to you, Cutbert Cutpurse the Coneycatcher :
Thy judgment is to stand at the market-cross,
And have thy cursed tongue pinn'd to thy breast,
And there to stand for men to wonder at,
Till owls and night ravens pick out thy cursed eyes.

¹ [We must suppose here that Honesty sends out some of the attendants to bring in the Coneycatcher and Farmer, who soon make their re-appearance on the stage.]

CONEYCATCHER.

Good Honesty, be more merciful.

HONESTY.

You know my mind, O Walter that-would-have-more, and you shall have judgment I mean, which is : to be carried into a corn-field, and there have your legs and hands cut off, because you loved corn so well, and there rest till the crows pick out thine eyes. —

But now to you, that will do nothing,
Except the Spirit move you thereunto.
You shall, for abusing the blessed word of God,
And mocking the divine order of ministry,
Whereby you have led the ignorant into errors,
You, I say,
As you were shameless in your shameful dealing,
Shall, to your shame, and the utter shame of all
Bad-minded men, that live as thou hast done,
Stand in Finsbury fields, near London,
And there, as a dissembling hypocrite, be shot to
death.

PRIEST.

Good Honesty, be more favourable than so.

HONESTY.

Truly, no; the Spirit doth not move me thereunto.—
But who is next? what, Perin, a courtier and a
cosener too!
I have a judgment yet in store for thee :
And for because I will use thee favourably,
I'faith, thy judgment is to be but hanged.
But where? even at Tyburn, in a good twopenny
halter :
And though you could never abide the seas,

Yet now, against your will, you must bear your
sail, namely, your sheet,
And in a cart be tow'd up Holborn-hill.
Would all men living, like these, in this land,
Might be judged so at Honesty's hand.

KING.

Well, Honesty, come, follow us to court,
Where thou shalt be rewarded for thy pain.

HONESTY.

I thank your grace. You that will damn your-
selves for lucre's sake,
And make no conscience to deceive the poor ;
You that be enemies of the commonwealth,
To send corn over to enrich the enemy ;
And you that do abuse the word of God,
And send over wool and tin, broad-cloth and lead ;
And you that counterfeit kings' privy-seals,
And thereby rob the willing-minded commonalty ;
I warn you all that use such subtle villainy,
Beware lest you, like these, be found by Honesty.
Take heed, I say, for if I catch you once,
Your bodies shall be meat for crows,
And the devil shall have your bones.
And thus, though long, at last we make an end,
Desiring you to pardon what's amiss,
And weigh the work, though it be grossly penn'd.
Laugh at the faults, and weigh it as it is,
And Honesty will pray upon his knee,
God cut them off, that wrong the prince or com-
monalty.
And may her days of bliss never have end,
Upon whose life so many lives depend.

FINIS.

.

.

٤

